

ネコ光一

Illustration  
Nardack

8

# コエール 異世界式教育エージェント コエール

OVERLAP

# **World Teacher**

– Other World Style Education & Agent –

## **- Volume 14 - Goddess' Doctrine**

**-Author-  
NEKO Kouichi**

**-Artist-  
Nardack**

**[ Bayabusco Translation ]**

The illustrations are from the  
Eight Novel version.

Note that some differences may exist  
as there might be changes from WN to EN.





# WORLD TEACHER 8

異世界式教育エージェント

ネコ光一 Illustration: Nardack



リース  
*Weath*

レウス  
*Reus*

シリウス  
*Sirius*

エミリア  
*Emilia*

フィア  
*Fia*



旅は更に続く――

弟子の成長を噛みしめる夜。





あ、ああありませんっ!?

俺が……リースを攫われて  
悔しくないと思っているのか?

それでこそシリウス様です!

# Chapter 86

## The Unexpected Reunion

“As expected, they’re not chasing us anymore...” (Sirius)

“There is no one who can catch up to the carriage pulled by Hokuto-san, right?” (Emilia)

After reuniting with Fia, and achieving the championship of the Fighting Festival, we were ready to depart on a trip from Garaff. However, we met some unexpected ‘enemies’.

With Beauty, who got the wind of us out of nowhere, heading the list, Reus’ and my fans barged in.

There were adventurers who either tried to become our companions, or incorporated us into their members, so we rushed out of the town to run away from them.

There were also people who chased after us even outside of the town and said that they wanted to be my disciples, but since I was in the middle of broadening my views on a trip, I really had no intention to increase the number of disciples or students. Because of that, Hokuto had to work hard, continuing to run on the main road at a speed that was impossible for a normal carriage or a horse.

There wasn’t anyone who could overcome Hokuto, who ran without rest with nearly inexhaustible stamina, whether it was an adventurer or a horse.

We continued running for several hours and once we confirmed that no one was chasing from the rear, we returned to normal speed and leisurely proceeded down the main road.

As I sit together with Emilia on the coach seat, while carefreely looking at Hokuto’s back, Fia, who rested inside the carriage, came out and put her chin on my shoulder.

“Although it looks normal, it is a very cozy horse carriage. Even royalties probably won’t have such carriage, you know?” (Fia)

“Of course! It is a carriage designed by Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“The one who made it was the Galgan Company. I think that technology is a big deal.”  
(Sirius)

I remembered the time when this carriage was made while smiling at Emilia, who boasted as if she was the one who made it herself.

I sold the suspension technology to the Galgan Company, and I had them incorporate the function as compensation.

Zack, of the Galgan Company, was happy with the technology that would become a revolution of the horse carriage, but then he asked me what request I had for him. Hence, I asked him, but they had to struggle in many ways.

By excluding some parts, as a carriage, which primarily functioned for moving, how many goods and people that could be loaded was important.

However, I wasn't traveling as a merchant. It was only to broaden my view... in other words, it was like a trip. It would probably right to make the carriage similar to the nobles' and royalties' in order to spend time comfortably.

“Aniki, I am hungry.” (Reus)

Since we had been running in a hurry to escape those troublesome adventurers, Reus, who stood on top of the carriage to train his sense of balance, had his tummy boldly grumbling.

Soon, it would be noon, based on the position of the sun. Not only Reus, Reese also seemed to be hungry, so I ordered Hokuto to stop the carriage in a place with a fine view. We split the jobs and started preparing for lunch.

Reus and Hokuto would procure meats. I entrusted Emilia to secure herbs and wild vegetables, while Reese and Fia would help me with the cooking.

Stir-frying the meat and vegetables procured with the raw noodles prepared prior to the departure, it was a lunch of salty yakisoba.

By the way, when I cooked this noodle dish in Garaff, Beowulf came by before the end of the day to inform me that he would be looking for the Strongest Sword, Lior, after



resigning from being an escort. Afterwards, he became absorbed with the noodle dish before bidding farewell.

Besides, he told me that Jekyll and Sieg had already left the town, but since Reus was staring as if to say that the amount of food being eaten was decreasing, it was a delicate farewell.

While continuing to eat the dish, and thinking that Beowulf could probably find Lior-Jiisan, I noticed that Fia was eating the Yakisoba while showing a distant look.

“What is it, Fia? Does it not suit your taste?” (Sirius)

“There is no such thing. I was just thinking for a bit, but the dish is very delicious.” (Fia)

“Of course, that’s because Sirius-sama’s cooking is done with plenty of affection. Anyways, what were you thinking about?” (Emilia)

Fia wryly smiled at Emilia’s question. She looked at the dish, and continued eating it while talking to us.

“I was thinking that after traveling with Sirius... I don’t think that I can travel alone anymore.” (Fia)

“I understand that well, Fia-san. It’s just that... I, myself, can’t travel alone, you know?” (Reese)

“Oh, really?” (Fia)

“It is fun to be with dependable friends, a comfortable carriage and even delicious meals. Even though people can tolerate pain, once they taste luxury, they can’t run away from that.” (Fia)

““That’s for sure!”” (Emilia/Reus)

Emilia and Reus were intensely nodding at Fia’s remark. Since Fia had been traveling alone, she had an understanding about us being abnormal.

Fia was explaining it with a bitter smile, but she suddenly felt depressed and covered her face with her hands.

“So I was thinking about how I could be helpful in anyway, but... I am totally lost. I am... the most unworthy one.” (Fia)

It was bad for Fia to be depressed, but plainly speaking, she wasn't very helpful in cooking.

Although there was no gap to help because of my and Reese's performance, I thought it was justified since she barely had any experience in cooking.

“That can't be helped, right? If it's alright with Fia, I will teach you various things together with everyone, so what do you say?” (Sirius)

“Yes, please. Even though I am older, if compared to you guys with the way I am right now, it is embarrassing.” (Fia)

“There is no need to think that far. It is alright to gradually learn them.” (Sirius)

It was impossible to forcibly change her, but if she desired it, I should teach her then.

There were things that need to be remembered, even if I forced them to remember, but other than that, it was my policy to let them independently decide. The current disciples decided by themselves that they wanted to follow me.

“Besides, it's not good if I don't receive the same training as you guys. I don't want to be a burden.” (Fia)

The result of practice running together when we stayed in Garaff was that Fia had the stamina of an adventurer, but it was lower than our own.

In her case, she could use Spirit Magic and defeat her enemies before approaching them, and since she could jump high by using the wind, there was no need to have stamina to that extent.

However, this might be a improbable possibility, but there might be times when the Spirits would not lend their power, or times when she couldn't borrow it.

When I told Fia that she should be able to respond to such a worst case scenario, she firmly agreed and told me that she wanted to train. It seemed that she remembered the careless mistake in the past, where she was rescued by me.



“We were stopping because we had been running until a moment ago, but we will run in turn starting from noon. For the time being, Fia will do it until you reach your limit.” (Sirius)

“Uuu... I’ll try my best.” (Fia)

“Ah,ahaha... Sirius-san will never ask for impossible things, so please do your best.” (Reese)

“The training is hard only at the beginning. If you think that is for Sirius-sama, it’s not painful at all.” (Emilia)

“When you get used to it, there will be a sense of completeness!” (Reus)

The disciples supported with the significance of their respective training to Fia, who anxiously nodded.



“Your pace is declining, you know? Alright... that’s it.” (Sirius)

“Haaa... haa... That’s intense.” (Fia)

Later, we departed after we finished eating lunch. As stated earlier, we got off the carriage and ran.

Reus and I ran in parallel with Fia, while Emilia and Reese were resting in the carriage after finishing today’s quota.

On the other hand, Fia was the one who ran the whole time, while changing the pace. Now, I was teaching her how to keep a constant pace. I was thinking about going to the next stage soon.

“I-I don’t dislike training, but this is more than I imagined.” (Fia)

“Alright, let’s rest once we go over that hill. As compensation, you need to run with your full power.” (Sirius)

“Aah... gosh! If that’s how it is, I will do it. After this is over, I want a reward. I’d like a lap pillow!” (Fia)

“If it’s just with my lap, that’s easy. Well, shall we go at once?” (Sirius)

“I will go ahead, Aniki!” (Reus)

Currently, Reus was wearing leg bands and bracelets made of Gravilite, which was a much heavier ore than iron, and Fia muttered in shock as his running figure headed towards the hill that not only overtaking us, but also the carriage.

“He is running at the same time as me while wearing those weights. You guys really aren’t ordinary.” (Fia)

“I admit that we are not ordinary from the perspective of the world. However, Fia will also be similar to us with what I have taught, you know?” (Sirius)

“At this point of time... I am an oddball among Elves, but I am not an oddball of the world. If I can reach your levels, I will do as much as I can!” (Fia)

Fia said that with a serious look. She, then, mustered her remaining stamina and overtook the carriage.

Emilia and Reese, who had heard such proclamation from the carriage, looked at Fia’s back with a gentle look.



Beyond the hill, I brought Fia, who collapsed after reaching her limit, back to the carriage, and I gave her a lap pillow as promised.

To tell the truth, it wasn’t about the promise. I planned to give Fia a lap pillow in order to apply [Regenerative Activity], but since she was putting her head on my lap and seemed happy, it wasn’t necessary to tell her that.

However, in order to apply it, it was ineffective to recover stamina unless she slept. Because of that, I was waiting for Fia to sleep, but she kept smiling while looking at my face.

“What is it, Fia? You won’t recover if you do not sleep.” (Sirius)

“I know, but it’s a waste. When it is about a lap pillow, you can’t do it if I am not like this, right?” (Fia)



“It also depends on the situation, but if you want it, don’t hesitate to say it.” (Sirius)

“Although I said it in this situation, I am the one who wants to give you a lap pillow. Don’t you guys think so, too?” (Fia)

Emilia and Reese, who sat nearby, were nodding in agreement.

Especially Emilia, who was smiling and tapping her lap as if to say, ‘Here, you can have it anytime’. That affectionate smile... looked similar to Erina-Okaasan. I seemed to think about her without noticing it.

“Oh yeah... I think that I will have it someday, but Fia’s recovery is the priority, right now. Do not push yourself because you are tired.” (Sirius)

“Hehe... yeah. I’m tired, so let me sleep a little...” (Fia)

As Fia fell asleep before finishing what she wanted to say, I put my hand on her head, and poured some of my mana into her.





When I poured my mana, so as not to disturb her sleep, Emilia and Reese, who were looking at the sight, quietly sighed...

“...Fia-san is sneaky.” (Emilia)

“Yeah. To be defenseless in a time like this...” (Reese)

“What do you mean by sneaky?” (Sirius)

““Her sleeping face is really sexy!”” (Emilia/Reese)

“Aah—...” (Sirius)

They said it with their mouths looking envious.

A man would be involuntarily fascinated, so it couldn't be helped for them to be envious when she seemed able to naturally display a sexy sleeping face.

It was because Emilia had an innocent sleeping face, like a child, and Reese had a defenseless sleeping face with drool that could spill at anytime.

I told them about it when they woke up, and they were in a panic with reddened faces.

“Even if you can't be like Fia in particular, you both have your own merits. You don't have to imitate her, and I just like Emilia and Reese the way you guys are.” (Sirius)

After beckoning and calling them, I stroked their heads with one hand, while giving treatment to Fia with the other hand.



Later... we kept moving through the main road, while continuing our training, and then, we got off the road to get ready to make camp at sunset.

While we were preparing for the dinner in a proficient manner, Fia, who couldn't move due to the training fatigue, seemed to be sorry. However, as I said earlier, during midday, it was fine because she would gradually get used to it.

I had Emilia and Reese replace me in the middle of cooking, and then, I gave a massage that was also used to confirm Fia's physical condition.

“Is there any pain other than muscle pain?” (Sirius)

“No... there’s none. Hmm... here... is good.” (Fia)

“Don’t make that seductive voice, alright?” (Sirius)

“It’s just that this is my first time feeling good while having my legs massaged. I wonder if everyone else gets this, as well?” (Fia)

Emilia and Reese, who were stirring soup, nodded at Fia’s question, while blushing a bit.

“That’s right, we also receive Sirius-sama’s massages. It has decreased recently, but... I can’t forget the excitement when I received it for the first time.” (Emilia)

“Yeah, it was pretty pleasant, wasn’t it? But, it make me really sleepy.” (Reese)

“I immediately fell asleep, you know?!” (Reus)

Unlike those two girls, who received the massage while feeling sorry and wanting to stay awake a bit longer, Reus fell asleep when I started massaging him.

“Aah... I understand... that feeling...” (Fia)

“Oioi, it’s too soon to fall asleep. You still haven’t had your dinner, right?” (Sirius)

“Yeah... but I wonder if I can eat? I am tired and I don’t think my stomach can accept anything...” (Fia)

“You’re right, so I guess you have become like that, huh?” (Reus)

Fia, who had half-asleep eyes, bitterly smile while touching her stomach, but I thought that it was natural for her to be unable to eat a meal after that much running.

Even though...

“Is there such a thing? Weren’t we able to eat everything at that time?” (Reus)

“Since the meals Sirius-sama cooked were very delicious, I was able to eat it.” (Emilia)

“You will get hungry when you train a lot, and you are not able to eat the meals!?”  
(Reese)

“...Am I weird?” (Fia)

All of my disciples were surprised, but you guys were the weird ones when you could composedly eat after training.

There was nothing to disagree with Emilia and Reus because they were a different race, but... Reese was really a mystery.

“Don’t worry. Fia is normal. I already prepared a soup with little ingredients for now, so please eat it, even if it’s just a little. Not having nutrition is the worst thing.” (Sirius)

“Did you expressly making it? Since it is so, I’ll try to eat it.” (Fia)

Fia, who gave a bitter smile while receiving some soup Emilia poured, was surprised when the soup entered her mouth while extending her hands with a pet expression.

“Yeah... since it is lightly seasoned, I can eat it, somehow. It’s easy on the stomach.”  
(Fia)

Since I made something similar to bonito with the fish that I got from the Silver Wolfkin’s settlement, it was a soup created based on its soup stock. Considering Fia’s stomach, I made it rather bland, but the nutrition should be enough because it was cooked with other ingredients.

“Eat as much as you want, since we will eat the leftovers.” (Sirius)

“Sirius-sama, our parts have been completed. Shall we have it soon?” (Emilia)

“That’s right, Aniki. I’m hungry.” (Reus)

“I’m hungry.” (Reese)

These children... no, these disciples started to make a fuss because of hunger, so we decided to have dinner.

More than the somewhat strong soup, Fia muttered in agreement as she was eating a colorful sandwich with an original sauce on meat and vegetables.



“Hehe... it’s difficult, but since you already made it, I’ll try eating it. I ought to be strong...” (Fia)



When the meal was finished, next was a bath.

There was no such thing like a hot spring. Usually, it was at the level of wiping your body with a cloth soaked in hot water. However, it was also possible to take a bath if there was a plan made in advance.

Taking out a special lump of iron with low thermal conduction, which was carried on the carriage, I put it on the ground and poured my mana into it. The lump of iron changed shape, while widely spreading.

Since this lump of iron was drawn with a [Create] magic formation, it was designed to deform into a predetermined shape when it was filled with mana. In other words, it was like a shape-memory alloy.

And when the lump of iron spread out... three people could easily enter the bathtub.

Later, I had Reese pour some water in using the Water Spirits, and when Reus activated [Flame Knuckle] after putting his hand inside the bathtub, the water became hot water.

After that, it was the completion of an instant outdoor bath by connecting the carriage to a nearby tree with a rope and making a partition with some cloth.

The female group went in first. In the meantime, I read a book on the other side of the carriage, and Reus spent the time swinging his sword. By the way, Hokuto was guarding near the partition.

Since they would be defenseless when taking a bath, I tried not to get too far away, in case something happened. Thus, I could hear the conversation of the female group.

“Haa... I feel refreshed. Even so, I didn’t think that we could take a bath in such a place.” (Fia)

“We’re really having the luxury, right?” (Reese)

“It would be better if Sirius-sama was taking a bath together with us. I want to scrub his back for the first time in a long while.” (Emilia)

“Aah, isn’t that alright? Hey, Sirius! Why don’t you enter here with us?” (Fia)

“Eeh! Wait a sec, Fia-san!” (Reese)

“No... I’m not going in.” (Sirius)

Recently, I felt like I was aimed at by those three at every opportunity, so it would be very dangerous when I thoughtlessly go in.

The conversation continued as it was awhile, but Emilia and Fia finally gave up. Anyway, since Reus was swinging his sword with nothing else in mind, I didn’t think that he heard the conversation.

“...So nice...” (Reese)

“What is it, Reese? Is there something on Fia-san’s body?” (Emilia)

“Eh... aah, yes. I’m... jealous of her beautiful skin.” (Reese)

“Yeah, the Elves are sneaky.” (Emilia)

“Oh, you guys have something that I don’t have. Although you guys are still young, those big chests are foul play.” (Fia)

“I-I aimed for something different, but they just get bigger...” (Reese)

“It’s getting bigger in order to satisfy Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

...As expected, should I be using earplugs?

If I listened more than this, I would somehow feel bad.



While proceeding with the training in that way, our trip continued on and three days had passed.

Fia had gotten used to the training a little bit, and now she was able to eat meals to some extent.

We were currently off the main road. After preparing the camp, while we were in the middle of eating dinner, the sky was still bright and the sun was still high as we finished the preparations early today. However, since there were times like this, we didn't mind to continue eating.

"Haa... the meal was delicious. Nevertheless, I didn't expect to get used to this so soon."  
(Fia)

"It is an evidence that Fia has worked hard. Do you want more?" (Sirius)

"Yes, please. This Udon is really delicious." (Fia)

"Another, please." (Reese)

"Me too!" (Reus)

"Sirius-sama, I also want more!" (Emilia)

As I boiled the Udon, which I had been getting tired of making recently, I put some into each of their bowls. I reflexively invoked [Search] when I saw Hokuto, who sat nearby, suddenly stand up.

I detected several reactions coming towards us. As I quickly cleaned up the cooking utensils, my disciples, who were wondering about what I was doing, started to notice the incoming reactions.

"Someone is coming, Aniki. Are they enemies?" (Reus)

"I don't know. But, don't go ahead as you please, Reus." (Sirius)

"Fia-san, this is..." (Reese)

"Yeah, the Spirits are also restless. Like those two have said, it seems something is approaching." (Fia)

Emilia and Reus detected them based on smells and intuition, while Reese and Fia noticed the other party when the Spirits informed them. In most situations, with the



exception of Hokuto and I who noticed first, the detection ability of those four people was quite splendid.

Their facial expressions were serious, but they didn't get flustered, since they were all holding bowls containing Udon.

"... Shall we eat it quickly and end it around here?" (Sirius)

""""Thank you for the meal!"""" (Emilia/Reese/Reus)

"The heat!? ...Wait a sec!" (Fia)

Fia was slightly struggling, but by the time she finished cleaning up after eating in one gulp, we caught figures of people running from the other side of the hill with our naked-eyes.

"It's a young boy and girl pair. Aren't they a bit younger than us?" (Emilia)

"What? That man... I feel like I've seen him somewhere before. Does Aniki also think so?" (Reus)

"Yeah, me too. However, they're both..." (Sirius)

"Yeah, it looks like they're both being chased by something. According to the Spirits, it seems that five people are approaching from behind them." (Reese)

The boy pulled the girl's hand, while desperately running towards us.

I felt like I was getting involved in something troublesome as it is, but that boy was somehow familiar, and I couldn't ignore them, since the other side had noticed and was running towards us.

Maybe my disciples had sensed it as they stood up without me saying anything, and they were waiting, while preparing for battle.

"Are they being chased by thieves? If that's the case, should we help them?" (Emilia)

"That depends on the approach of the other party. Let me tell you guys in advance. Don't be careless, even if you know them." (Sirius)

“Got it! That will be after we determine whether they are friends or enemies... right?” (Emilia)

“That’s the standard of adventurers. Are those kids Sirius’ acquaintances?” (Fia)

“I don’t know the girl, but that boy is probably...” (Sirius)

“Sensei—!” (??)

The one that let out the loud voice with unorganized breathing was Chris Fayt... or Chris. After we left Elysion, we went to the village where Noel and the others live with him.

He was a trainee of the Galgan Company, and he was doing the merchant apprenticeship under the Company’s boss, Gadd, but... why was he in such a place?

Although it might be possible to cross to a different continent as a merchant, he didn’t have any luggage and was injured. No matter how I looked at him, it didn’t feel like he came for business.

As we were puzzled, we waited for them to run towards us, but the girl, whose hand was pulled by Chris, stumbled on a stone and fell.

“Aniki! Chris is in danger!” (Reus)

“Sirius-san!” (Reese)

“...” (Sirius)

“I can’t just watch them, Aniki!” (Reus)

“Me too.” (Reese)

“...Do whatever you like. After this is over, you have to take responsibility.” (Sirius)

“Got it!” (Reus)

“Yes!” (Reese)

Reus and Reese, who couldn’t endure it, went running towards Chris. Even if they

knew each other, there was a possibility of being pointed at with weapons and threatened.

And since the reaction that followed them was still a distance away, there was still time to confirm things about Chris, but... this was troubling.

When I looked at their running figures from behind, Fia, who stood next to me, put her hands on my shoulder with a bitter smile.

“Aren’t they young? But... they are kind children.” (Fia)

“Well, I must watch it because that’s their strong point. Anyway, are you alright with that, Emilia?” (Sirius)

“I am Sirius-sama’s attendant, so I will stay by your side. To tell the truth, I also want to go, but since Reus and Reese have already gone to them, I thought that it was necessary to see the situation from behind.” (Emilia)

“Really? It looks like you think well.” (Sirius)

After I stroked Emilia’s head, we slowly chased the two while keeping a distance. Actually, it would be better not to move, but it would be difficult to deal with something if they were too far away.

And as soon as Reus arrived at Chris’ location, the remaining five reactions appeared from behind the hill.

Hmmm... if this was some time ago, Reus would probably protect the other party behind his back, but he was stopping at a place where he could see both Chris and the guys who seemed to be the pursuers. It wasn’t just Emilia, it seemed that Reus was also thinking properly.

“Are you alright, Chris!?” (Reus)

“Re-Reus-san! Those guys are aiming for this child...” (Chris)

“I’m not sure about this, but they are enemies! I will defeat them!” (Reus)

“Please, wait a minute.” (??)



Reus tried to jump forward, while taking his sword out, but the girl Chris was taking shouted while raising her body.

“It is dangerous for you alone! I can still run, so Chris-kun and everyone else, please escape!” (??)

“It’s alright! If it’s Reus-san, it will be fine, even with guys like that.” (Chris)

“But, they are five opponents, and they are guards—...” (??)

While the girl was puzzled at Chris’ proclamation, Reus jumped forward and stood in front of the five people who seemed to be the pursuers.

The five people who rode horses were equipped with full-body armor, like knights, but since the helmets were removed and hung from the horse’s harnesses, it was understood that they were all human beings.

The men had to stop their horses because of Reus, who suddenly stood before them. And then, the man who was thought to be their leader pointed the tip of the spear at Reus.

“Who are you? We receive the favor of Mira-sama<sup>(1)</sup> and will judge the criminals as Mira-sama’s apostles! There is no mercy if you get in our way!” (Leader)

“I don’t really know who Mira is, but I understand that you apostles are the guys who are being childish for chasing two children.” (Reus)

“What did you say, you bastard!? You’re a fool who doesn’t know who Mira-sama is! I don’t care if you get in the way. We shall judge you together with the criminals!” (Leader)

“You’re wrong! Mira-sama never desires such a thing! So, please, stop fighting!” (Girl)

The girl desperately screamed, while trying to stop them, but somehow the men had weird looks and didn’t even stop. They started their assault, while pointing their spears at Reus.

As Reus observed how to fight the men on the horses, which were higher than himself, Reus took a deep breath without preparing his sword...

“Come at me!” (Reus)

The men and the horses flinched from the overwhelming bloodlust unleashed together with his loud voice. He probably tried to imitate the bloodlust that I unleashed the other day, but the way he unleashed the bloodlust was closer to Lior’s than mine. It seemed that the intensity wasn’t there yet... but it was good enough for these guys.

Taking the opportunity when they were caught off-guard, Reus kicked the ground and leaped out.

“W-what!?” (Leader)

“Here I come!” (Reus)

Reus, who leaped at the man who seemed to be their leader, swung his partner from the side, and made him fall off his horse.

He, then, jumped again by using the vacant horseback as a foothold, and quickly swung his greatsword. He knocked down two enemies, who were surprised, from their horses.

“You! Is this beastkin trying to oppose Mira-sama!?” (??)

“Don’t tell me something I don’t know!” (Reus)

Two men thrust their spears, aiming for the gap when Reus landed on the ground, but he evaded it and grabbed one of the spears and lifted it up along with the opponent.

“It-it can’t be! What strength...” (??)

“And, you’re the last one!” (Reus)

Swinging the spear together with the user, it hit the last man on a horse and knocked him down.

Reus, who knocked down every last one of them, held his sword towards those who were still able to move.

“Well then, now we are on equal terms. Come from anywhere you want.” (Reus)

“Kuh! It’s only a beastkin, even without a horse...” (??)

One person fainted by the shock of the fall, but the remaining four prepared their spears and were striking at Reus again.

“Chris-kun... who are these people?” (Girl)

“They are friends! They are Sensei’s disciples...” (Chris)

“We are friends. Long time no see, Chris. I would like you to explain the reason, but shall we move away from this place for now?” (Reese)

“Long time no see, Reese-san! The reason is... I will tell you later.” (Chris)

“Because it is you, I don’t think it is something bad. Anyhow, I see that you’re injured, can you show it to me?” (Reese)

While Reese confirmed Chris’ and the girl’s injuries, Reus’ battle was about to end.

A man directly hit by Reus’ sword was horizontally blown away, displaying the appearances of the fainted men with their armor being crushed as their fighting spirit faded away.

There were three people remaining, but all they could do was hold their spears with completely daunted postures.

“Alright... anyway, are you guys still going for it? If you are going to throw down like a man, you will not end up like the guy who is lying down over there, you know?” (Reus)

“You-you dare to do such things to us? Mira-sama’s judgment will rain down upon you!” (??)

“I told you. I don’t know who this’ Mira’ is. And the one that can make a judgment if I do bad things is only Aniki!” (Reus)

“Damn it... we’re almost there! Rearrange your stance!” (Leader)

When Reus raised his sword at the remaining dispirited men after clearly saying that, they scattered and ran away.



Although they were a bunch with weird eyes and words, they knew that they were not his match and chose to run away. It might be alright to even praise their conduct of dispersing in order to increase their survival rate.

But...

"I won't let you go away!" (Reus)

"That's right! [Air Shot]" (Emilia)

"Oh wind, please!" (Fia)

This was not a match, and here we had our friends.

They were dispersed towards three directions, but one running man got caught by Reus' sword, and the remaining two were hit by the balls of wind that Emilia and Fia unleashed from a long distance, and they had completely fainted.

We silenced all the men in that way. And then, we headed to Chris and the girl, who were receiving treatment from Reese.

After defeating the pursuers, I thought that it was bad to ask them while they were feeling relieved and still receiving treatment, but first, they needed to explain the situation to clearly determine whether they were enemies or friends.

"Long time no see, Chris." (Sirius)

"Sensei... Long time no see. By the way, thank you for saving us." (Chris)

"Rather than saying that to me, you should say thanks to Reus and Reese. More importantly, I didn't expect to see you again in such a place. It seems that things have turned somewhat strange, hasn't it?" (Sirius)

"Yes. There are many things. I wonder where should I explain it from...?" (Chris)

This was probably not a very good situation, and the girl, who was pulling Chris' sleeve, held her head as if she was worried about the explanation.

"Chris-kun. Are these people the ones that Chris mentioned?" (Girl)

“You’re right. This is the Sensei who taught me how to become stronger. You know, Ashley<sup>(2)</sup>... I think Sensei and his friends can be trusted. Why don’t you consult with him?” (Chris)

“But, to involve people who are not related is...” (Ashley)

“As for sending the Imperial Guards, they are really aiming for your life. Besides, as for me, right now, I probably can’t do anything. We will definitely be driven to a corner if we keep remaining like this. That’s why, even if it is embarrassing and troubling, you should choose a method where there is hope!” (Chris)

Chris grabbed the girl’s shoulders, and spoke with a serious expression while looking into her eyes.

While regretting in same the way as Chris, the girl nodded at his desperate plea, despite her regret.

I entrusted Reus and Hokuto to tie up the men. After that, Chris and the girl raised their faces towards us and they finally told us their story.

“Sensei, to tell the truth, I would like to consult you about this, but...” (Chris)

“I think that there are various complicated circumstances, but if you are not in a hurry, why don’t we start by introducing each other?” (Sirius)

“Yeah... you’re right. Since there are people who are meeting for the first time... again, my name is Chris Fayt. Please feel free to call me Chris. And this here is... uhmm...” (Chris)

“Chris-kun, I will...” (Ashley)

Interrupting the introduction from Chris, the girl slowly got up and graciously bowed down.

The girl’s age was close to the 13-year-old Chris. She had similar long blue hair, which was divided into two parts on the temporal region, which was also known as a twin tail.

Although she had a shabby appearance, wearing a dirty gown, that bow reminded me of upper nobles.

“My name is Ashley Mira Rodenheide<sup>(3)</sup>. Thank you so much for helping me and Chris this time.” (Ashley)

“As I had said to Chris, if it’s the gratitude, say it to Reus, who is tying the men over there, and the girls next to me. Nevertheless, you are Mira... huh.” (Sirius)

Since she was wearing a pendant that symbolized a sun on her chest, I understood that there were believers who believed in the goddess called Mira-sama. And as a part of her name contained Mira, she wasn’t just a believer. I had a bad feeling.

I had mostly guessed, at this point of time, but I secretly sighed at the next words uttered by that girl.

“And... I am the Saintess of the Mira temple in Fonia<sup>(4)</sup>.” (Ashley)

Fonia... that was the name of the town we were heading for next.

Since there was also my student, Chris, we believed that we would be involved with troubles soon.



### **Extra/Bonus 1**

The conversation that was somewhat missed during the battle this time.

“You scoundrel who goes against Mira-sama!” (??)

“Heh... if that’s the case, you are the scoundrel who goes against Aniki!” (Reus)

“You’re right, Reus! The fools who go against Sirius-sama will have nothing but death!” (Emilia)

“Because it is such a religion! Don’t you dare to go against it!” (Reus?)



### **Extra/Bonus 2**

In regards of the bathtub, here’s how the story moved on.

“Aah... it feels good.” (Emilia)

When Emilia greatly stretched her hands and body out, that appearance (covered by steam) was greatly shaking.

“Say, Emilia, do you want me to wash your back?” (Reese)

Having a thing like a sponge, Reese (who was saved by the strange occurrence of steam) came out from the bathtub.

“Hehe... my back is good. Will you do it to me after her?” (Fia)

Rising from the bathtub, the beautiful characteristics of Elves (which was meaninglessly covered by Hokuto from the front) was lavishly exposed.

The so-called ‘Service Scene.

It was not a service because they couldn’t be seen due to the steam, right?

Dear readers, please brush off the steam with your imagination power.

You need to... further discuss it with Hokuto though. (Author)



## **Presenting Hokuto**

Hokuto continued traveling with his Master even today.

In the evening, when his Master started preparing for camp, he instructed Hokuto-kun and Reus-kun to procure meat.

And then, they went together into the forest looking for prey. They parted along the way and decided to look for prey on their own.

When Hokuto-kun was looking for a prey, he found a small rabbit-like monster that had fur similar to him.

According to the information Hokuto-kun heard before, it seemed the fur of that rabbit-like monster was expensive, so he immediately took it down.



However, this monster had characteristics that the fur would deteriorate over time when it died, and he remembered that when he took it down.

The meat didn't seem to be tasty, Hokuto-kun thought about giving it up and throwing it away, but something flashed in his mind.

It would be good if he could skin the fur on his own.

—This is the first time of skinning—

※Please play the theme song when you send your child to buy stuff for the first time in your brain. (Author)<sup>(5)</sup>

Hokuto-kun didn't have A knife for skinning, but he had the nails that he was proud of.

He carefully moved the sharp nails, and slowly skinned the fur.

Hokuto was in a good mood because he could skin better than expected...

<Ooh! I don't believe it, you can also do the skinning, you are amazing, Hokuto! As expected of my partner.> (Sirius)

He had a delusion that his Master would pat his head and he was wagging his tail without noticing.

However, Hokuto-kun, carelessness was a powerful enemy.

“Gyii!?” (Goblin)

He was too absorbed with the skinning, and he was late to notice the approaching goblin.

Actually, if it was Hokuto-kun, he would be fine no matter what the goblin did, but since he wanted to avoid getting dirty under a surprise attack, he regularly sharpened his senses.

The reason was that he couldn't bring himself to let his Master brush his dirtied body. Hokuto-kun liked to keep things clean.

He was late at noticing the goblin, but since there was some distance, he wasn't

surprised.

But, maybe because the goblin had approached him more than he expected, he unintentionally became clumsy.

And when he noticed it... the fur, that he was skinning, was tore into two. Let me repeat, Hokuto-kun's nails were sharp.

"..." (Hokuto)

"Gyi...gyigiii—!?" (Goblin)

At that time... the goblin saw a scene of carnage.

"Grrrr—!" (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun, who immediately swept the goblin, was visibly depressed.

The reason why Hokuto-kun was depressed was the failure of the skinning, and that made him burst his anger towards groups of goblins.

The only one alive was Hokuto-kun.

There were times when he was depressed, irritated, and venting his anger.

Although Hokuto-kun wasn't quite satisfied, since he managed to secure a wild boar-like monster that appeared along the way, he fulfilled his Master's order.

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun couldn't stay depressed forever, so after recovering his motivation, he stood up while holding the prey in his mouth.

Hokuto-kun decided to beautifully skin it next time. He turned his back on the grave of the rabbit-like monster, where he also buried the goblin.

To tell the truth, Hokuto-kun was secretly a hard worker.

# Chapter 87

## The Unforgivable Matter

The Doctrine of Mira.

It seemed to be one of the religions that exist in this world. It was a religion which I came to hear about after coming to the Adload Continent.

It appeared to have avid believers. I'd seen the appearance of these believers, whom wore a crest drawn with a sun that symbolized the Doctrine of Mira, doing community services.

Mira was also known as the Goddess of Love. It seemed to be the Goddess of Charity, giving her love and kindly watched over the people.

In fact, the believers were mainly seen with good faith, and... with Mira-sama's love, it reached out to people who were in trouble. It seemed to be a sincere religion suitable for its name.

Although people would seem to be easily swindled with ill will, the mystery and harm were small, and the rumor about Mira-sama's divine protection was gradually spreading.

Well, what I understood was only that much.

I thought that it was a personal liberty in terms of religion, even though I would say that I wasn't interested that much.

"And... I am the Saintess of the Mira Temple in Fonia." (Ashley)

Fonia was the birthplace of the Doctrine of Mira-sama... Moreover, a girl, who claimed to be the Saintess, was in front of me.

However, despite being a Saintess, she was chased by the people who claimed to be the apostles and the ones who punished the criminals. And since her attire was dirty in general, I could only think that there must be a problem.

Another thing to worry about... Why was Chris here?

There were many parts that I didn't understand, but the sun would set soon and it was getting dark. They seemed to be tired, so should we returned to the carriage at once?

"Saintess... huh? Well, let's put that matter aside. Anyway, we should take a break. Since we are preparing our camp over there, it's alright for you two to join us." (Sirius)

"Eh!? Y-yes. How should I say this... You are so calm." (Ashley)

"Didn't I said that, Ashley? Sensei is special." (Chris)

"Whether you are a Saintess or not, it doesn't have anything to do with me. I will ask for the details after you take a rest and settle down." (Sirius)

We dragged the tied men and returned to the carriage.



"...This is my first time eating this, and it's really delicious!" (Ashley)

"Sensei's cooking is delicious, after all." (Chris)

We made our camping preparations again, which had been cleared halfway during the critical time, and I was serving Udon to Chris and Ashley.

They were using forks, since they didn't know how to use chopsticks. They seemed to like the taste and they were eating with smiles on their faces.

When hearing them, it looked like they didn't eat enough because they were busy running away from those men. As I cooked additional Udon while telling them to eat without reserve, it went without saying that I also served a bowl to Reus and Reese, who had eaten moderately after their meals were interrupted.

After we finished our meal, I talked about the main issues while having tea served by Emilia.

"Since you have calmed down, please explain the situation. Other than protecting you both, I'll have bad dreams if I say goodbye without doing anything." (Sirius)

“Sensei, we are being pursued, but if we explain it, will you lend us your strength?”  
(Chris)

“It depends on the details. I will listen to both of your explanations, and I will decide whether to lend a hand or not.” (Sirius)

Even if it was for a short time, Chris, who was involved in this, was my student, and I’d like to help him. However, I couldn’t unconditionally help him.

Although I knew Chris, I still didn’t know anything about Ashley. If it turned out that Chris was cheated by Ashley, there was a possibility that I would have to deal with her, even if I had to show no mercy

“If you think it is fine, tell me. If you can’t explain it for some reason, I will not ask you anything, and I will take you to a nearby town.” (Sirius)

I said that with a condescending attitude towards the Saintess. We were not even the believers of Mira’s Doctrine, so if they were going to ask for help, they had to properly explain and lower their heads.

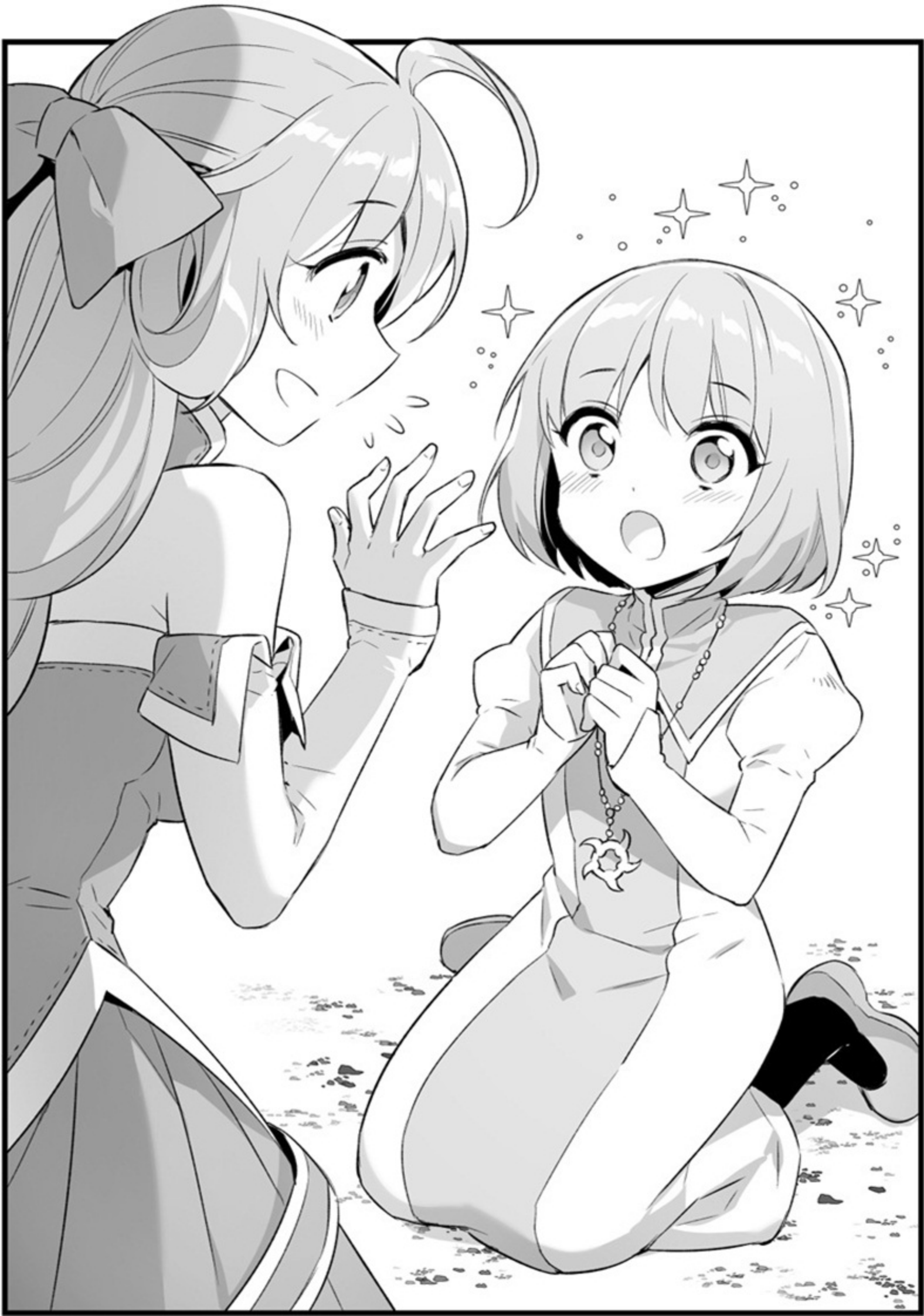
Chris was smiling and put his hand on Ashley’s shoulder, who was surprised by my proclamation.

“Ashley, there is nothing to worry about. So, it’s fine to honestly tell him the situation. Besides, if Sensei lends his hand, I’m sure we will somehow manage it.” (Chris)

“Sirius-san is someone who will understand if you sincerely speak.” (Reese)

“Chris-kun, Reese-san... I got it. If you can help, please help.” (Ashley)

They were probably on good terms when she was treated. Ashley, who smiled due to Reese’s assurance, nodded as if she had decided.





“First—... where should I begin?” (Ashley)

“When I met Ashley—... No, the order may be different.” (Chris)

“Well, when I ask, answer it within your limit. I heard that Ashley is the Saintess of Mira’s Doctrine. So, what kind of position is that Saintess?” (Sirius)

“It is the third highest position in Mira’s Doctrine. Saintess is the only one who can receive Mira-sama’s oracle.” (Ashley)

“Hmm... Then, why is that Saintess being targeted by the same Mira’s Doctrine believers?” (Sirius)

Looking at the fainted men with their mouths gagged, tied up and left over there, Ashley was sadly depressed and was about to cry.

“I... disobey Mira-sama’s Doctrine, and that was because a prophecy about becoming a heretic, who abandoned the doctrine, was received.” (Ashley)

“Going against the Doctrine... is it? Did you announce yourself the oracle that push you into corners?” (Sirius)

“From the beginning, Mira-sama is the Goddess of Love that can’t confer such an oracle. And... it wasn’t me who received the oracle.” (Ashley)

Didn’t she say that only the Saintess could receive the oracle, so what did this mean?

Maybe the disciples, who were listening to the story, thought the same thing in their minds, since they were looking at each other in puzzlement.

“Question, how do you receive an oracle?” (Sirius)

“There is an altar inside the temple. I can receive an oracle if I pray there. And no one but the Saintess can receive an oracle...” (Ashley)

“Is there anyone else who can receive an oracle other than Ashley? In other words, that person...” (Sirius)

“Yes. That person received the oracle, declared that I am the enemy of Mira-sama and tried to punish me.” (Ashley)

That person was Dolgar. He seemed to be the Archbishop who held close authority to the Saintess, Ashley.

“I don’t understand the reason, but an oracle, which should have been received only by the Saintess, was received by the Archbishop for several months.” (Ashley)

He appeared to be suspected in the early days, but let alone phenomenon that occurred when there was an oracle, the way how the oracle happened did properly happened. For example, there were natural disasters, such as a flood of nearby rivers, had been anticipated.

Since it was a more detailed oracle than Ashley’s, he gained the trust from the surroundings. As a result, the position of the Saintess, Ashley, gradually worsened, and it seemed that the supporters within the temple had decreased.

“Even so, I didn’t mind about that. Many could be saved because of the oracles of Archbishop-sama. I am fine if that will let the love of Mira-sama to be known. But...” (Ashley)

A month ago... it was said that a big festival, which was held once a year, was held to gather the officials of the temple and to receive oracles.

The only one who could receive oracles was the Saintess until now, so Ashley went there, but the Archbishop was chosen by the surroundings to receive the oracle this time.

And while the temple officials were watching, Dolgar, who received the oracle, loudly shouted.

<There is an oracle from Mira-sama! The Saintess... No, Ashley Mira Dogenheide is a heretic who goes against Mira-sama. This is the oracle to lay the judgment to such an existence!> (Dolgar)

Ashley had, of course, rebutted, but there was already so little on her side. Nevertheless, she escaped from the temple with the help of the remaining supporters. It seemed that she’d been running away from the town.

“In order to let me get away, there were many believers, whom supported me, that had been sacrificed. After that, together with the remaining believers, I ran away to a port town, which is far away from here.” (Ashley)

Ashley wished that she had escaped to another continent, but she had been the Saintess of Mira-sama, so she didn't know any other way of living.

She believed that the day would come when she could prove her innocence and come back. However, when hiding in the port town and gathering information, it appeared that there had been a change among the believers of Mira's Doctrine.

"The larger the offering is, the better oracle can be given. They will become happy, and the things that never existed in Mira-sama's Doctrine had been increasing. Mira-sama is a goddess that is like the sun that pours its love equally to the people. Although I can say that such a doctrine is definitely impossible..." (Ashley)

"What is that? Although you understood the equality in love, why did you believe such a thing?" (Sirius)

"If the offering is numerous, they will be given preferential treatment from Mira-sama's Doctrine. So, there are a lot of believers that think it will make their lives easier." (Ashley)

It spread around and also increased the number of people who wanted to do so. The usual teachings were also accepted... and that was what probably happened.

However, it would be nice if people could afford the offerings, but there were also those who couldn't make it from their livelihood. Such people were not only coldly treated by the surroundings, but also mentally driven to a corner.

For that reason, the present Fonia was in an unrestful situation, and some people had left the town.

"It's sad to say that people have been abandoned by the surrounding environment, and those who are in higher stature. But, there are people who are not like that, right?" (Sirius)

"Yes. There are also some who think differently based on the true Mira-sama's Doctrine. But since those people have suddenly disappeared or had unnatural deaths, it seemed that it is naturally becoming the word of mouth." (Ashley)

"Even though there is such a situation, what about those people who have a higher position than you?" (Sirius)

“The Pope-sama, who is the top, went on a pilgrimage all over the continent in order to spread Mira’s Doctrine since a year ago.” (Ashley)

For a Pope to go on a pilgrimage... he was surely doing as he pleased. I considered that it would be fine with such a Pope, but by looking at Ashley, who couldn’t help smiling, that seemed to be a daily occurrence.

“There is Cardinal-sama below him, but he has been lying in bed for several months for unknown reasons. If the Cardinal was healthy, such a matter...” (Ashley)

In brief, for the top positions, there was only the Archbishop, Dolgar, and the Saintess, Ashley.

Hmmm... The Archbishop, Dolgar, was the only person who had the convenience for himself, and it couldn’t be helped to say that he was suspicious.

With just Ashley’s story, it wasn’t a good idea to decide without seeing the actual location, but that possibility was high, since she was being pursued by Mira’s Doctrine believers.

“I couldn’t stand seeing Mira’s Doctrine being soiled any further than this. When I gathered those who knew Mira’s Doctrine and had decided to fight, I was found by the guards of Archbishop-sama, who has been searching for me.” (Ashley)

If Dolgar was the main culprit, then the ones who would probably become his enemy were the Pope, and the remaining supporters of the charismatic Saintess, even if they were tricked by the oracle.

There was no mistake that in order to completely deal with the Saintess, Ashley, the enemies became eager and searched for her.

“I... can’t do anything other than receive an oracle. The number of enemies is too many. The believers who had been supporting me, became decoys and I was the only one who was able to run away. But, even though I tried to run away earlier, I was found by one of the Guards, and when I thought that I had no more hope... Chris-kun helped me.” (Ashley)

“When I was working, I accidentally found out that Ashley was being pursued, and I instinctively jumped out...” (Chris)

Thinking that it was only a girl, that Guard tried to hog the credit by pursuing Ashley without calling his companions.

And then, when she was driven into a blind alley... Chris gallantly appeared and defeated the enemy.

I guessed there was such a thing like Ashley sending an intense glance at Chris with reddened cheeks.

“Although Chris-kun is almost the same age as me, he went up against a bigger opponent with his bare hands and knocked him down. He was... really amazing.”  
(Ashley)

“Do you mean those guys over there are the Guards? So, you can defeat them alone, Chris!?” (Reus)

“No, that’s because I’ve learned a lot from Sensei.” (Chris)

The smiling Chris seemed embarrassed when Reus tapped his shoulder. Hmmm... remembering the muscles Chris had during our previous engagement, it looked like he didn’t neglected his training.

To train until that extent, even though he had a job as a merchant, it seemed to me that he was a hard-working man, more than I expected.

“I understand that you were rescued there, but why were you being chased in such a place?” (Sirius)

“I was saved thanks to Chris, but my friends were caught and taken back to Fonia. With the present Mira’s Doctrine, I can’t imagine what they will do to the traitors. I couldn’t stay, even if I was there. I also didn’t listen when Chris-kun tried to stop me, and when I headed to Fonia, I found out that...” (Ashley)

“After that, we met Sensei while running away from them. We were really saved.”  
(Chris)

“...Why is Chris here? What about the Galgan Company?” (Sirius)

“That is...” (Chris)

It might be hard to say from the moment he diverted his eyes, as if he felt bad, but since we were close with the Galgan Company, I wanted to properly hear his story.

Chris waited without saying anything awhile, and then, he started to speak bit by bit.

“I... came together with Gadd to the port town where I met Ashley.” (Chris)

Chris was studying to be a merchant. He seemed to have been brought by Gadd, who had been seeking business expansion and unknown commodities.

Later, when strolling around the town alone, Chris, who was separated from Gadd, saved Ashley. When he heard about the situation... he decided to help her.

Indeed Chris was saved by Gadd, when he was sold as a slave, and he said that he had a huge debt of gratitude. And going with Ashley meant that he left Gadd's wing. Since she was being pursued, he couldn't do his thing as a merchant.

“I understand... that I am a guy who returned the favor by picking up enemies. But, I can't leave Ashley, after all.” (Chris)

After that, when he explained the situation of Ashley to Gadd... he was seriously beaten by Gadd.

<I already don't know the bastard who forgot his debt, go wherever you want. And go die a dog's death!> (Gadd)

“I was a slave when I was bought by that person... and yet he didn't ask for anything. But, I didn't want to him to face trouble later. I... was picked up by a really wonderful person...” (Chris)

“Chris-kun... I'm sorry...” (Ashley)

“It's alright. You don't have to worry about it. Because I have decided that I will protect you.” (Chris)

To leave Gadd's wing showed that he was really concerned about Ashley. It was evidence that he really wanted to protect her.

“Say, Chris, do you really want to protect her?” (Sirius)



“Yes, I want to protect her. I am still not strong enough, but... I will do anything to protect her.” (Chris)

I see... he really understood the situation.

Although there were various coincidences that have overlapped, I thought that it was great to be able to help those two and I was happy to see my student again.

However... there were things that must be said to them first.

“Aren’t you moron!?” (Sirius)

I slowly got up, and dropped my fists onto Chris’ and Ashley’s heads.

It was fine for Chris, since he was my student, but I thought that I had no right to scold Ashley during our first meeting. I thought that they were pitiful by looking at their eyes, but I couldn’t overlook the matter.

“Auu...” (Ashley)

“Se-Sensei!?” (Chris)

Both of them didn’t expect to be hit. They looked up at me awhile with tearful eyes.

My companions were also looking at me in puzzlement, but I didn’t mind, while glancing at Ashley.

“First off, Ashley. Your determination is splendid, but it is reckless to go to an enemy’s camp without preparing any measures. If you died in vain, you would trample the thoughts of those who helped you, right?” (Sirius)

“But, I can’t do anything by myself... so what should I do now...?” (Ashley)

“Find somebody who you can consult with, but there is Chris, right? Besides, Chris tried to stop you, but you didn’t listen. If your acquaintances get killed because of your own actions... won’t you regret it for the rest of your life?” (Sirius)

“A... uu...” (Ashley)

To tell the truth, I wanted to ask what action she would take, or whether she realized

that the situation on her side was diminishing, or the questionable behavior of the Archbishop, but it was already a past story. There was no other option since she was still young.

But, even if she was impatient, she went to Fonia in spite of Chris' warning and that was intolerable. This was probably a reflection, but somebody had to be angry in order to make her realize her own thoughtlessness.

Looking away from Ashley, who was about to cry any time soon, this time, I was looking at Chris.

"Chris... if you want to protect her, why you didn't wholeheartedly stop her? If it was you, you should know what would happen." (Sirius)

"Ple-please, wait a minute! Chris-kun didn't do anything bad! I was forcing him to..." (Ashley)

"Keep your silence. Although it was a short while, didn't I teach you how to live, other than training? You didn't utilize it, you know?" (Sirius)

In other words, Chris had the ability to judge the situation.

By judging that it was too reckless to charge into the enemy's camp without preparation, he should have forcibly stopped her. If he wanted to protect her, I wanted him to calmly say that he would take all of the responsibilities.

Perhaps, he understood that. The result of giving in to her push and going with the flow... was something like this.

"If we weren't here, you guys would surely captured by them. Chris, who is unrelated to this, would be killed, and as for Ashley, there is no way to know what they would do as a warning." (Sirius)

"...I have nothing to say about that. It is true that I was lenient. And I didn't utilize... what Sensei had taught me." (Chris)

"Yeah. It is fine if you can admit your failure and reflect on it. You guys are still alive, so make use of what you have learned next time." (Sirius)

Although it depended on the situation, there were many things they could do as long

as they were alive. It would become an experience, even if they failed, and with accumulated experience, they would grow more.

Continue walking without stopping, even if there was a failure... That was my educational policy.

And, I should say the most important thing.

“Well... even though I can forgive the failure, I will never forgive you if you died in vain! This is what you guys almost did this time. Do not do this kind of thing again! Of course, you guys, too!” (Sirius)

“““““Ye-yes!”“““““ (Emilia/Reese/Reus/Chris/Ashley)

As everyone replied, my scolding was over. I had told them the most important thing, so even though the wound could be healed, the fatigue remained. Hence, it would be harsh to get more tired than this.

When I was preaching nearby, the two of them didn’t calm down. Incidentally, when I turned around, I matched with Emilia’s and Reese’s gazes, and they nodded as if to say that I could entrust it to them.

If there were women who were also my disciples, Chris and Ashley would probably calm down. After leaving them to my disciples, I quietly left from that place.

While sitting on the root of a tree a little ways away from their range of vision, Fia came and sat next to me. She smiled while putting her hand on my shoulder.

“Thanks for the hard work. That was the first time I saw you getting angry, but you are quite a good Sensei.” (Fia)

“I couldn’t overlook it, after all. Although it was something that could be said to all, don’t let me say the things earlier too many times.” (Sirius)

“I understand that. You were angry because it was a serious matter.” (Fia)

“If you understand that, there’s nothing to say in particular, right? Anyway, about Chris...” (Sirius)

“Do you want to help him? You can do whatever you want without having to worry

about everyone. We will just follow you, Sirius.” (Fia)

“Sorry for the trouble. If my disciples know this, and die before my eyes, as expected, I...” (Sirius)

During the earlier conversation, I exercised a silent pressure to my disciples who seemed to want to do something about the situation. In addition to sympathizing and listening to the conversation, it seemed that they couldn’t leave Chris, who was like a younger disciple whom received the same training in the past, alone.

I thought that it was fine to show sympathy to them, but there was no need to worry to that extent, since they could recognize enemies based on past experience.

“If I leave it as it is, they are likely to head towards the enemy line again.” (Sirius)

“You’re right... and they are also good children, but it seems that Ashley can’t see anything ahead due to the heavy pressure and her duty, and Chris is looking after her because she can’t see the whole thing.” (Fia)

“Even though I said that I would lend a hand, it will be like that if Dolgar and these guys are the lowlives.” (Sirius)

“Yeah, I got it. I think that the possibility is high from the situation of that girl, but if we only believe one side of the story, we can’t continue being adventurers.” (Fia)

Talking with Emilia and Reese would calm me down, but as someone who had a rich life experience, the conversation with Fia went well with its tempo and was comfortable.

After that, I spent the time discussing future plans with Fia.



“Sirius-sama. Both of them have calmed down, so it’s alright now.” (Emilia)

“Alright, shall we head back?” (Sirius)

After a while, Emilia came to call me, so we returned to everyone.

Ashley was the only who wasn’t there. It seemed that she suddenly fell asleep, as if she

had fainted, after feeling relieved during the conversation with my disciples.

“She was also tired, but since she continued to endure the whole time, it seems that the mental fatigue was great.” (Emilia)

“She is sleeping in the carriage now.” (Reese)

“Well done. More importantly, are you alright staying awake, Chris?” (Sirius)

“I am used to it to a certain extent, so I’m still fine. Leaving that aside, thanks again, Sensei. Please lend us your strength! Later, we...” (Chris)

“That is the case, but... from now on, we are heading to Fonia, and I plan to stay for several days to resupply. In the meantime, I will lend a hand.” (Sirius)

“Re-really, Sensei!?” (Chris)

Chris was delighted and let out a loud voice, but he hurriedly close his mouth when he remembered that Ashley was asleep.

“She will not wake up since she is tired. However, there is something I have to do while she is asleep.” (Sirius)

“Sirius-sama, what are you going to do?” (Emilia)

“I will interrogate the captured men and get information. It is severe to show this to her since she believes in the Goddess of Love. Hence, I want to finish it while she’s still asleep.” (Sirius)

“Yeah. I don’t want Ashley to see it, and I... also don’t want to see it.” (Reese)

“Yeah, that’s why we’ll do the interrogation with me, Reus and Chris only. You three will watch over Ashley here.” (Sirius)

An interrogation was not something pleasant to look at. Especially for Reese, since she was on the healing side, rather than the injuring side, I didn’t want to show that kind of thing to her.

“Understood. Leave Ashley to us.” (Emilia)

“Please avoid injuring them as much as possible.” (Reese)

“Take care.” (Fia)

Emilia quietly nodded, Reese let out a breath as if she was relieved, and Fia nodded while lightly closing one of her eyes.



Leaving the camp, we brought the men to a place where they couldn't be heard by the girls, and then, we immediately started the interrogation.

The men were awake at the time we led them away, but since their mouths were gagged, we couldn't hear anything but groaning.

Knocking the men down on the ground, I asked Reus to untie the gag while they were between us and Hokuto.

“Well, we're going to question—...” (Sirius)

“Bastard! You dare doing something like this to the apostles of Mira-sama...” (Guard 1)

“You're noisy!” (Reus)

The man shouted as soon as he became able to speak, but Reus swung down his greatsword without hesitation. Although it was certainly stopped before it hit, I could say that it was splendid. Because of his superb handling, the blade slightly touched his neck.

However... even though this wasn't the first time to do an interrogation with Reus, I didn't remember telling him how to do this. Could it be because of that weird Jii-san? I would have to check it later.

“Hiiii!?” (Guard 1)

“Listen...From now on, just answer Aniki's questions. Or shall I gouge your neck out every time you refuse?” (Reus)

“A-alright...” (??)



He probably understood the fear of dying that was unleashed by Reus, and the other four were also intensely nodding.

While having Reus in front and Hokuto at their rear, I asked the questions and I got information to a certain extent.

Although the men were the Guards under the Archbishop, they weren't thinking too much about Mira, and they were just small fries who tried to suck up while getting hired by the Archbishop.

On the contrary, the way they waved their weapons while mentioning Mira's apostles, it seemed that the Archbishop told them to do so.

He was saying that was a just cause, so the feeling of being guilty was also diminished. I didn't know what they thought about that, but since the Archbishop would recognize their judgment as good, they might as well do it.

Having continued interrogating to obtain further information, Chris, who kept silent behind Reus and I, while watching the progress of the interrogation, called out to us in puzzlement.

"Uhhh... Sensei. Why did you bring me here?" (Chris)

"You were being chased by these guys, so don't you think that you might want to get some revenge or kill them?" (Sirius)

"It is true that these people tried to catch Ashley, but I don't want to kill them. Besides, looking at such a sight makes me remember some bad memories and I don't feel good about it." (Chris)

Perhaps, this sight reminded him of when he was a slave. While having a traumatic expression, Chris tried to look away from the sight as much as possible.

"How come Reus is fine? If you were a former slave, you're supposed to detest this kind of thing." (Chris)

"I certainly don't like it, but I am aware that these guys are our enemies. Besides, if Aniki recognized them as enemies, there is no way I'm getting confused." (Reus)

"Just for that reason!?" (Chris)

“It’s all good to me. Chris, this may not be something you like, but you have to properly watch this. There must be a good reason for Aniki bringing you here.” (Reus)

“Eh!?” (Chris)

Since we’d been together for long time, Reus seemed to know me well.

As Chris turned his eyes towards me because of Reus’ words, I slowly nodded.

“Whether it’s harsh or not, be sure to look at it. You will definitely need it.” (sirius)

“This is... necessary? What should I learn by seeing this act of slavery?” (Chris)

“These men are the dark side of Mira’s Doctrine. Although it is not fitting the Mira’s Doctrine mentioned by Ashley, it actually exists, and it’s not only your life, they even aimed for the life of the Saintess, right?” (Sirius)

“!?” (Chris)

No matter how beautiful on the ‘surface’, there was always a malicious person on the other side.

In this incident, the other side furiously bared its fangs, and it completely took over the ‘surface’. Besides, the main culprit seemed to be the Archbishop, and apparently, it was done with considerable planning.

And Chris insisted on protecting the Saintess, Ashley, no matter what happened.

“Let’s say... that this thing is settled, and let’s assumes that Ashley returns to Fonia again. After that, do you think an incident like this will never happen again?” (Sirius)

“That is...” (Chris)

“You don’t think so, right? Especially, when you already experienced slavery and know how ugly a person can be. However, it can be avoided beforehand.” (Sirius)

The current situation can’t be easily overturned, but it might have been possible at the beginning.

In order to notice it beforehand, even if it was a cruel act, it was necessary to have a

broad perspective to see the world underneath. That was why I told Chris to properly look at it.

“She is a girl who shines on a front stage. She is still young and has a kind personality. Hence, she surely can’t see the other side. However, if it is you, you can do it.” (Sirius)

“Because... I will protect her.” (Chris)

“Yes. Of course, it’s not just the enemies on the other side; you can also protect her from the enemies of the ‘surface’. So, don’t avert your eyes and look. And then, be strong. I don’t know what drives you, but you have that much of resolution, am I right?” (Sirius)

“That’s for sure! I... will definitely protect Ashley!” (Chris)

“That’s what I want to hear. Nevertheless, I didn’t say for you to suddenly do the interrogation. If you are overdoing it, you are no different than those fools that you know.” (Sirius)

“Yeah. I will learn about moderation.” (Chris)

“It’s troubling if you make it as a basis. Well... I guess I should go with the next question at once.” (Sirius)

The men, who had been jostled by the bloodlust that Reus and Hokuto continuously unleashed, were pretty dispirited.

Shaking their spirits, we heard about the Archbishop’s strength...Incidentally, the man, who seemed to be the leader, suddenly started to laugh as if he noticed something.

“Ha...hahaha! Perhaps, you’re going to challenge the Archbishop?” (Leader)

“That is the plan, but what’s wrong with that? If there are Aniki and me, it will be useless even if there are hundreds of people like you.” (Reus)

“No... it’s over. Because you will be burned by Holy Knight-sama’s Spirit Magic.” (Leader)

“Spirit Magic?” (Reus)

Whether he was looking forward of the things we would do, the leader didn't even listen to us anymore, and easily leaked the information.

The Holy Knight, who could use Fire Spirit Magic, was the protégé of the Archbishop Dolgar, and it appeared that it was extensively announced that the knight could use Spirit Magic.

It seemed that he was not only there to protect Archbishop Dolgar, but he used an overwhelming power to fight against the existence that threatens Mira's Doctrine.

"That beastkin is certainly strong, but against Holy Knight-sama, you will be burned by the flames together with that stupid Saintess who said useless things like love, hahaha!" (Leader)

"Hmmm... I know that the Holy Knight is strong. What will happen to you guys now even if you tell us that?" (Sirius)

"Haa?" (Leader)

We understood well how terrifying Spirit Magic was, since there were some among us who could use Spirit Magic.

That was why I understood why the leader was trying to act tough...

"Is there someone as strong as Holy Knight-sama here? If he gallantly appeared right now, is he going to help you, who is bound and immovable?" (Sirius)

"N-no... Holy Knight-sama is..." (Leader)

"It looks like you only said it without understanding your situation. Besides, you switched your earlier words in front of the Saintess-sama's knight, you know." (Sirius)

"Don't make a fool of Ashley!" (Chris)

That complacent smile was overturned, and the leader's face became filled with blood, since he was beaten up by Chris.

"Ashley is not stupid! She believes in Mira, and she is also breaking her heart in order to help people in trouble! People like you guys, have no right to laugh, especially when you can do nothing but take things away!" (Chris)

“Ba-bastard...” (Leader)

“Keep it down, Chris. And we are already done with you guys. I will untie their restraints.” (Sirius)

When I sent a signal with my eyes, Hokuto nodded and swung the nails of the forefoot. He cut only the ropes that had bound the men.

“Hahaha! I don’t know what you are thinking, but aren’t you fool for cutting off the restraints...?” (Leader)

“You will get restrained one more time, you know?” (Sirius)

I already finished drawing the magic formations, so when I filled the magic formations with mana, soil and stones swelled from the feet of the men and started to cover their bodies, except their faces. Hence, five pieces of soiled objects had been completed.

Based on Reese’s magic, there was a case of enclosing the opponent with a large water sphere so that the opponent couldn’t move. And this was the soil version.

“What is this spell!?” (Leader)

“Captain, I can’t move!” (Guard 2)

“Damn it! Me too!” (Guard 3)

“Sensei... I understand the significance of learning a while ago, please don’t kill them. Ashley will feel sad.” (Chris)

“That’s why I ended this by restraining them. Let make them regret it overnight.” (Sirius)

The restraints of this soil would naturally collapse around tomorrow in the afternoon, and it would set them free. When I told Chris this, he was reluctant, but then, he nodded and was convinced.

“Well, we already got the information, so shall we return? Since you are also tired, leave the look out to us and take a good rest.” (Sirius)

I thought that there were monsters in the vicinity, but I didn’t want to trouble myself

about that.

I wasn't a demon, either. They were restraints that people could get through, if they had enough strength, and if they were lucky, since it was already night, someone might pass them by.

While the men were making noise asking for help, we returned to the camp.



"Uhhh... will you really lend me your strength? There is a Holy Knight who uses Fire Spirit Magic, you know?" (Ashley)

"Yeah, I am helping you with that knowledge in mind." (sirius)

Next morning... while heading towards Fonia, I explained the thing about lending a hand to Ashley, who was sleeping last night.

Incidentally, I told her that the captured men fled from the place with their horses, and she was smiling as if she was relieved. Even though they were trying to kill her, she had the kindness that befits the name of Saintess.

She was glad at the beginning, when she heard that I would lend a hand, but maybe she remembered the existence of the Holy Knight, since the smile on her face faded away.

"But, Holy-Knight-sama's flame has unrelenting power. When we ran away as traitors, we saw a believer being burned by the flames in his hand. If everyone becomes like that... I would absolutely hate it." (Ashley)

"It's alright. So, I'd like to ask Ashley. What kind of person is this Holy Knight? I want some information, even just a bit." (Sirius)

"Uhhh... I don't involve myself with him that much, but anyway, he is a scary person. In response to the orders of the Archbishop, an appearance that burns enemies without mercy is also a symbol of fear." (Ashley)

It looked like he had quite a rough and selfish personality. It was said that he burned an unrelated house by releasing flames without worrying about the surroundings.



Even so, being a Holy Knight, a position under the Archbishop, he had so much power, other than being protected by the Archbishop. The more I listened, the more troublesome he was.

“In the end, he is a person who’s drowned in power. Both of you, please keep that in mind.” (Sirius)

“Of course! To use Spirits in such a way... I can’t forgive him!” (Reese)

“Spirits are not weapons, they are friends. It will be no good if he doesn’t experience pain even once.” (Fia)

These two, who could use Spirit Magic, were angry with the selfishness used by the Holy Knight.

“That’s why it is enough to lead us to Fonia. If I stand before the temple, the true believers of Mira’s Doctrine may rise up.” (Ashley)

“I told you, that is no good. Certainly, he seems strong, but haven’t you heard the Archbishop’s order? If we hold the Archbishop first, we might be able to do something.” (Sirius)

“If it is Aniki, you can win, right?” (Reus)

“We will still be on a disadvantageous side if we hit them from the front. You guys think about various measures, but never challenge him alone.” (Sirius)

“In particular, Reus, please be careful.” (Emilia)

“Understood, Nee-chan. Whatever Aniki says is absolute!” (Reus)

If we went to Fonia with this pace, we would arrive just before noon.

In preparation for something that might be happening, the training today was discontinued. We, then, discussed the flow after we arrived in town, while getting on the moving carriage.

As we didn’t think that we would get caught up with the upheaval later, it felt like we were going for a picnic, and that made Ashley so surprised when looking at us.

“They are amazing, aren’t they, Ashley?” (Chris)

“Y-yes. How come... they can laugh? They may die, you know?” (Ashley)

“Well, they are Sensei and friends. They are the people whom I admire.” (Chris)

“Yeah. I feel like... I can understand that feeling.” (Ashley)

“If these people lend their hands, I’m sure that Ashley will be able to return to the temple. Of course, I will also do my best. And I... will protect you.” (Chris)

“Alright... Thank you, Chris-kun.” (Ashley)

The ladies were having gentle eyes, looking at those two who were staring each other while the air become good around them.

“Yeah... we’re also can’t lose to them. Sirius, I’ll sit by your side for a while.” (Fia)

“There is no need to compete. You too, Emilia.” (Sirius)

“I am Sirius-sama’s attendant.” (Emilia)

“Reese-ane, the front side is empty, you know?” (Reus)

“That’s a bit... embarrassing.” (Reese)

Although there was a possibility of making the whole town our enemies if we poorly handled things, we were still like usual.

Without feeling any tension at all just like this, we arrived at Fonia, a sacred place of Mira’s Doctrine.



## Extra

Recruiting people for Sirius’ Doctrine.

### Qualification

A respect for Sirius-sama. It is a condition to have the mind to service him without

disobey even once.

Activities after joining

You will only break your heart for Sirius-sama. No more and no less than that.

Benefits

Can eat delicious meals.

Can receive stroking and brushing from him.

By becoming executive, if you get permission, you will get the right to touch the mascot, Hokuto...

“I was wondering what were you writing... confiscation!” (Sirius)

“Aah!? That’s cruel, Sirius-sama!” (Emilia)



Hokuto’s clean up afterwards.

✂ Unlike the usual Hokuto, there are some brutal aspects here.

Since there is no cuteness scenes, readers, who don’t want to break the image of Hokuto, please be careful. (Author)

Midnight... After finishing the interrogation of the men, Hokuto appeared in front of the men detained by soil.

“Wha... what!? Are you planning to eat us!?” (Leader)

There was no one other than Hokuto. Although the men were scared to be eaten, when they realized that they couldn’t feel hostility from him, they let out a breath of relief.

“W-well, Okami-chan. This soil... will you break it?” (Guard 2)

“You idiot! Do you think that monster can understand your words!?” (Leader)

“No, this guy is a smart monster. It moved because it fully understands what that man said, so it probably understands if we talk to it.” (Guard 2)

“Really? It is still better than doing nothing.” (Leader)

“Alright. Say Okami-chan, we will not do anything anymore... so will you break this?” (Guard 2)

“We have already reflected on it. That’s why—... uhmm, what is that?” (Guard 3)

While the men appealed, one of the men noticed that Hokuto was holding something.

“...Prey? Is that your meal?” (Leader)

“Perhaps, is it not satisfied with that meal? Since it is big, it seems that it may need more.” (Guard 2)

“I-is that so? Hey, if you free us, I will fill your belly.” (Leader)

“If you are not eating enough, isn’t it hard with such a master?” (Guard 3)

“Since we have a lot of money, we can let you eat until you satisfied, alright?” (Guard4)

The men desperately persuaded without noticing the subtle changes of Hokuto.

And then, Hokuto dropped the prey on the ground...

“W-what!?” (Leader)

Brandishing his nails, he tore off the prey.

The men were surprised, but Hokuto didn’t do anything further and just turned his back.

“What... was that?” (Leader)

“Wa-wait! The blood...” (Guard 2)

To tear the prey means to splash the blood.

And the smell of the blood... was calling the predators.

When the men noticed it... Hokuto had already gone.

Hokuto was a partner of his Master, and a faithful servant.

One of his jobs was to receive an order to deal with opponents who would become a hindrance to his Master.

Even if he was seen as a demon, he didn't hesitate at all for the sake of his Master.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Because it was Hokuto's way of life.

# Chapter 88

## Trigger

The holy land of Mira's Doctrine, Fonia, was surrounded by walls.

It was a town which was a size smaller than Elysion, and it was also one of the relatively big towns on the Adload Continent.

Since this country had a town where Mira's Doctrine believers gathered, there were no such things like a castle and king.

There were people who managed the town, but since Mira's Doctrine acted as a center, it was said that if one controlled the Doctrine, that person was as good as controlling the town.

The temple of Mira's Doctrine, which could be seen from any direction, exuded a presence like a castle, and what spread beyond that as the center was the town, Fonia.

We stopped our carriage in a forest that was a distance away from Fonia.

We were fine, but it was dangerous to let Chris and Ashley, who were being chased, into the town without any plans.

Because of that, we stopped to hide the carriage in the forest and made the location our base. First off, we decided to go to the town on foot to gather information.

"Hokuto, I leave those two to you. In case of emergency, pull the carriage and run away. However, your life is the main priority." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"I will also remain together with the carriage. If I go into the town, we will be too conspicuous, and it'll become more of a hassle." (Fia)

Certainly, before we could understand the situation in Fonia, we should refrain from any unnecessary disturbances.

Since the Elf, Fia, stood out, there was a high possibility that it would hinder the information gathering if we got involved with something.

“Sorry for the trouble. Contact me if there is something. Do you remember how to use it?” (Sirius)

“Yes. I can speak while pouring mana into this choker, right?” (Fia)

“Since you can’t talk too long, try to minimize the words used. Well then, we’re going.” (Sirius)

“Take care.” (Fia)

“Sensei, everyone... please be careful.” (Chris)

“Mira-sama... please grant your love to these people.” (Ashley)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

While being sent off by our companion, the four of us set foot towards Fonia.



Depending on the situation, those who couldn’t prove their identity when entering a big town often had to pay some toll.

Since we were adventurers, there should be no problem if we showed our guild cards, but it didn’t work in Fonia.

“To enter Fonia, you all must wear this. It’s one iron coin each.” (Guard)

That being said, the thing that we had to forcibly buy during the screening at the gate was a pendant that Mira’s believers wore.

It wasn’t that much money, and it was alright if I considered it as an entrance fee to the town, but...

“...It’s a clumsy work, isn’t it?” (Emilia)

“Yeah. Ash— ... no, the one that child has is better, right?” (Reese)

The pendant that Ashley had was a refined white ore. It was a splendid pendant engraved with the crest of a sun. The one we bought was made of wood and the whole thing was slightly distorted. We could see it as nothing but an inferior product.

“It is a mass-produced item. Therefore, it fits the expected quality. Conversely, don’t laugh at it, alright.” (Sirius)

“Goodness... although we are not believers, what are we going to do with it, since we already bought it?” (Reus)

“It may serve as a small income and advertisement. I don’t feel any magical response from this thing, so wear it to avoid trouble.” (Sirius)

Even those who could prove their identity still had to pay money. Besides, it was hard to throw it away, since we had to pay for it, so the people who had it multiplied, and that was why there seemed to be many believers.

It was a cunning plan, but since it didn’t become too much of a burden, I didn’t think that it was bad. I didn’t think there were too many of advantages, but if they made it better, I judged that there would be less animosity because it looked like a souvenir.

...Well, it didn’t matter to me. I put the pendant around my neck while somewhat feeling subtle about it.

“Sirius-sama, what’s the plan from now on?” (Emilia)

“As I have said before coming here, we are gathering information by walking in the town.” (Sirius)

Since it was late morning when entered the town, we found a suitable place for a meal, and had lunch.

While drinking tea after eating, we were talking about future plans in low voices.

“If you are worried about something, make sure you report it. After that, follow the plan.” (Sirius)

“...Understood.” (Emilia)

Emilia had a slightly disappointed face because I was going to act separately.



In other words, my disciples were going to investigate the ‘surface’ of the Mira’s Doctrine, while I would get in touch with an informer in order to investigate the ‘other side’.

It should be fine to take Emilia along, since I had taken Reus to see the underground world for study purposes, but I couldn’t say that the situation was good. Hence, it was better to consolidate their abilities as much as possible.

Ashley might rush it if we took too long; so this time, I thought that I would make progress by emphasizing efficiency.

“I have entrusted you with the arrangement of the accommodations. Well then, I’m going.” (Sirius)

“Please take care.” (Emilia)

“You can leave the Nee-chans to me, Aniki.” (Reus)

“Yes, please be careful.” (Reese)

In addition to information gathering, I told the disciples to avoid trouble, if possible.

If there was anything, they would contact me through the [Call] magic stone on their choker or earrings they had put on. And if they got involved with a troublesome opponent, it had been decided in advance that they would run away, even if they had to escape from the town. Even if they escaped into an unexpected place, if it was me, I could quickly find out where they were.

With the plan of uniting with them in evening, I separated from my disciples, who waved their hands while seeing me off.



There were many ways to come into contact with informants in the town, but first off, I decided to ‘attack’ the bars in a steady manner.

I walked through the town looking for a bar, but since a majority of the stores were closed during broad daylight, I kept walking around while checking the public order of the town.

The scene of the believers of Mira's Doctrine, who wore slightly luxurious attire, calmly walked along the stores and seemed to be ordinary, at first glance.

Incidentally, I also noticed adventurers and, with the exception of Mira's Doctrine believers, they were almost similar to the neighboring towns.

It seemed that the public order was well kept, but if you changed the perspective a bit, you would understand that that was a mistake.

"This is close to a country that reigns through fear." (Sirius)

The believers, who were grandly walking while wearing luxurious attires, were probably those who firmly gave offerings.

On the contrary, the appearances of somewhat out-of-luck believers, who were walking around the corners and trying not to stand out, were too conspicuous. These people, who were like vagrants hiding in the shadows of buildings, were obviously wary, and some of them seemed to be terribly scared.

As I continued walking, I stepped into a slum area that always existed in every town, but there were many buildings that have collapsed. It was a terrible sight where numerous pitiful-looking burning marks remained.

"It's terrible." (Sirius)

Based on how things were caught on fire, the way they burned was abnormal. Clearly, it was artificially done. So, I asked a man from the slums who was sitting nearby, and gave him money.

The result of the information obtained was that the criminal seemed to be the Holy Knight of Mira's Doctrine. I heard that he came while laughing the other day, and burned the area here.

"He said that we were trash and not fit to be Mira's Doctrine believers. That guy thinks of us that way." (Slum's Man)

Was this situation being done in a straightforward way? Mira's Doctrine seemed to be getting worse compared to Ashley's story.

There was no one who could stop the Holy Knight and the people of Mira's Doctrine. I

guessed this was getting out of hand. There would more victims as time went on.

After that, I found an open bar in the vicinity and entered the building. While collecting gazes from several customers, I sat at the counter seat. I ordered a low-alcoholic drink from the Master(1) and asked him.

“Give me a bottle of sake behind you. By the way, I’m looking for an informer. Do you know any?” (Sirius)

“Well... In the past few days, the people and buildings were burned since the Holy Knight was doing the ‘cleaning’. Hence, there are no informants, anymore.” (Master)

“Are you fine with this?” (Sirius)

I put a silver coin in the cup I was drinking and placed it on the counter.

The Master, who saw that, slightly diverted his gaze while tucking the silver coin away. He looked around before directing his gaze at me.

“What are you going to ask from the informer?” (Master)

“It’s about Mira’s Doctrine. Especially if there is a person who is well-informed on the other side.” (Sirius)

“...Unfortunately, there is none. Now that I got this, let me warn you. Stop investigating Mira’s Doctrine. It will come back at you.” (Master)

“Is that so? Sorry for disturbing you.” (Sirius)

Drinking the alcohol served, I quickly left the store, and walked down the slums again.

I intended to get into contact with some bars in a similar fashion, but... I might have got a hit from the beginning.

Since I caught five reactions following me, I kept walking towards a blind alley on purpose, while pretending to get lost. It wasn’t difficult to grasp the topography by using [Search].

Since I came to the end of the alley, as expected, I looked back towards the way I came from, and the bunch who were following me, revealed themselves while closing the

path.

“Hehe... do you want to pass through here? Then, you have to pay for it, you know?”  
(??)

The other side were the ones sitting at the bar in the afternoon. There were four large-build and one small-build men.

These people were probably vagrants who lived in the slums area based on their tattered attires, but I felt something different from what was on the outside. They were well-built to be vagrants in such a place.

As I looked at the men with a surprised expression, one of the men came close and glare at me.

“Oi, you, are you listening?” (??)

“I am listening. So, what do you want?” (Sirius)

“Cheh... you, quickly take out your silver coins. Besides, you’re saving it, right?” (??)

Hmm... I handed it over without being seen to avoid troubles like this, but... was the Master of the bar and these people in cohort?

The man was frustrated because I didn’t show any reaction at all, so I replied back before he told me something.

“The truth is that silver coin earlier was the last one I had. No, I’m sorry.” (Sirius)

“Don’t tell me such an obvious lie! If you obediently take it out, you’ll be pardoned from being sold to Mira’s Doctrine, right?” (??)

“Being sold? Is the present Mira’s Doctrine collecting slaves?” (Sirius)

“Don’t you know? If you inform anyone who tries to meddle with Mira’s Doctrine at the temple, and if you hand them over, you will receive money. In short, you are that kind of guy.” (??)

“I see. Is that the price of crushing the seeds of rebellion? I will think about it in various ways, then.” (Sirius)

“If we sell you, we will be able to get food for a few days! Just obediently get caught!” (??)

And then, all of the men attacked at once, but it immediately ended because they weren't strong.

I reaped their consciousness by folding their arms, hitting their faces against the wall and holding them down on the ground. And the last man, who was blocking the path I was walking, was thrown far away.

The man made a parabolic flight in midair and dropped onto the ground. While he rolled on the ground... I quickly moved.

“Ooh... that's amazing. That's unexpected.” (??)

“Well... what is unexpected?” (Sirius)

“W-what!?” (??)

There were five people in all who were chasing me. But only one of them was separated from the group and looked towards me.

The last man was thrown in order to conceal myself by the hiding man's range of vision. Using that gap, I got closer just before his range of vision and shoved a knife onto his throat.

“Wa-wait! I am not an enemy!” (??)

“Are you in the habit of just looking at me being attacked?” (Sirius)

“Th-that is to measure your ability. Do you think there is such an informer who nonchalantly shows his face to a person who can do such things to those guys!?” (??)

“In other words, you are the informer. According to what you have said, am I good enough for you?” (Sirius)

“Y-yes. Since you totally passed, remove that knife!” (??)

I held back the knife, since I couldn't feel any hostility, but since I wasn't sure whether he was a real informer, I repeatedly questioned him.

And it turned out that he was a real informer. When I asked him why he indirectly acted, he said that there were too many people like the ones I defeated here and there, and apparently the informer couldn't move too much.

"Even by just collecting information can be seen as a rebellion against Mira's Doctrine. I usually hide among these people." (Informer)

The Master of the bar was a companion of the people I knocked down, but actually, he seemed to be a part of the informers. Was he like a double agent?

He judged those who had asked for informers, passed on whether they were rebels, and oversaw if they deserved to be contacted.

It was troublesome, but if they didn't do it to this point, they would be in danger.

"Anyway, you want information, right? There is an exclusive place in the bar earlier, you can ask there." (Informer)

Since the informer started walking towards the bar, I followed him while still being cautious.



And then, the informer and I, who returned to the bar, passed through a narrow room with a guide from the Master. No traps were found, and I didn't feel any other reactions through [Search]. So, it was likely to be reliable.

"I don't dislike you being cautious. Occasionally, this room is also used for confessions. The Master is standing guard outside, so you can ask anything without worrying." (Informer)

The informer sat on a chair prepared in the room, and as I sat on the other side, he was looking at me with a serious look.

"So... what do you want to ask? Offer me silver coins if you just want the information. You expected that much, right?" (Informer)

"Yeah, first off, let me offer a silver coin. After that, I will add the amount depending on the contents." (Sirius)

When I took out a silver coin, similar to the time with the Master earlier, the informer received it with a smile.

“Thank you. Are you sure you want to ask about the other side of Mira’s Doctrine?”  
(Sirius)

“Yes, first is...” (Sirius)

After that, I started with the number of injustices done by Mira’s Doctrine from the informer, and those who colluded with corruption, and the whereabouts of the believers who were fighting the present Mira’s Doctrine together with Ashley.

No matter what I asked, it could be said that the amount of information that could be answered was pretty limited. His skill was reliable, since he was able to survive in this kind of situation.

“Finally, I want to know about the Holy Knight.” (Sirius)

“...That guy, huh? By the way, what are you planning to do?” (Informer)

“I’m not doing anything. Depending on the situation, there is a possibility to encounter him, right?” (Sirius)

“Don’t say such a bad thing, and I want you to stop from getting in contact with him. He can use Spirit Magic, which is also dangerous, and his personality is bad,”  
(Informer)

The man was slightly older than me, in addition to being hedonistic and cunning. Plus, he seemed to have a brutal personality who burns his opponents without any mercy.

Moreover, since the fire would spread whenever he unsparingly used the mighty Spirit Magic, the damage to the surroundings seemed to be severe.

“Such a guy will do well joining Mira’s Doctrine.” (Sirius)

“The Archbishop raised him up since he was a child, so he only listens to the Archbishop’s orders. As the Archbishop started deviating from Mira’s Doctrine, he started to tolerate his conduct, and it gradually became extreme.” (Informer)

That fire-devastated slum area was one of his extreme conducts... was it?

Although he had done numerous conducts which people were unable to let pass unnoticed, there were some people who appealed to Mira's Doctrine. He was the Guardian of Fonia, and it seemed he did nothing but pass judgment to the enemies of Mira's Doctrine.

In reality, he defeated the outside monsters to vent his anger, and since that reduce the damage of monsters, it wasn't a mistake that he was the Guardian of Fonia.

The man, whom explained it to this point, was sighing and looked towards the window.

"This is a rumor, but recently, there are times when he doesn't listen to Archbishop's orders. If that's true, it's quite a strange story." (Informer)

"Nobody can stop him. Every day, people are scared by the fear of being burned by the whim of the Holy Knight." (Sirius)

"That's it. To be honest, I think that the town is no longer as it is. If you are an adventurer, leave the town before you meet the Holy Knight." (Informer)

Since the informer said so, I guessed he was about to leave the town soon. His appearance was like a vagrant, but it seemed that he was prepared in various manners to get out like an adventurer.

Well... I secured a considerable amount of good information as I confirmed the matter about the Holy Knight. There were suspicious rumors amongst them, but I just had to directly check on them.

Rounding up the talk, I took out a gold coin from my chest as a reward for him and put it on the desk.

"This was a very meaningful time. Is this reward good enough?" (Sirius)

"Heh... by no means, it is a gold coin. Are you a noble...? No, it doesn't seem so. Although it is only a bit, you have the smell of having the same profession as me." (Informer)

"Isn't it reasonable to pay an appropriate reward for such an ability? And, it is also against the rules for trying to know my identity without reason." (Sirius)



“You’re right. But, receiving a gold coin is maybe a bit too much. Other information... Aah, there was something I had forgotten to say.” (Informer)

The informer scratched his head. He opened his mouth while playing with the gold I handed over with his fingers.

“A few days ago, that bastard Holy Knight had a partner from nowhere...” (Informer)

[Can you hear me... Sirius-sama?] (Emilia)

When the informer was getting to the main point... Emilia’s voice resounded in my brain through [Call].

I reflexively activated [Search], and I felt a flow of mana as if something was happening from quite a distant place.

[I’m sorry. We have met the Holy Knight mentioned earlier.] (Emilia)

Immediately ending the talk, I left the informer and jumped out of the bar.



— Faeris —

After we separated from Sirius-san, we walked around Fonia while gathering information on Mira’s Doctrine.

It was about what the present Mira’s Doctrine was usually about, and about the residents’ evaluation.

We found a shop on our way, and while ordering some stuff, we ask questions about Mira’s Doctrine. First, we needed to purchase some stuff, and after that, it would be a very smooth information gathering. That’s what we learned.

“Thanks to Mira-sama, we can do business, but something is wrong with the present Mira’s Doctrine. They never asked offerings until now, but they started to demand it from a while ago. Here you go, ten skewered meats.” (??)

“If people give offerings, many can be saved, since they received money from the Mira’s Doctrine, but it’s troubling since the price has gradually increased. Here you go, ten

pieces of bread, thank you!" (??)

"The other day, my acquaintance got injured. After consulting with the temple, a believer, who was able to give treatment, was dispatched. However, I was requested a considerable offering as a treatment fee. If it was the earlier Mira's Doctrine, there would be no such thing, but there is nothing you can do about it if you think about that as a treatment fee. Yes, here are ten sandwiches. Thank you for waiting!" (??)

It was understood that even the residents were starting to feel weird. I wonder if they were trying to accept it?

On the surface, the residents seemed to live their lives like normal, but it wasn't my imagination that I could feel the unrest in the air.

Emilia and Reus said that they didn't want to enter the gaps between the buildings because they caught a smell they didn't like.

"...There is a somewhat uncomfortable feeling." (Reese)

"Yeah. I am not joking, but it is a weird town." (Reus)

"According to Sirius-sama, an extreme religion seems to have twisted with the people's conducts and beliefs." (Emilia)

On the surface, the people, who wore beautiful attires, walked while smiling, but when I looked at a slightly shadowy side, vagrants were often seen sitting in the slums.

Sirius-san said that there were cases that those people had surprising information, but until the end, we only needed to check the surface. We were trying not to get involved with them in order to avoid trouble.

Because of that, we continued going around the shops and listening to the people walking around, but along the way, we noticed a common detail.

"Ho-Holy Knight? Ummm... He is associated with Mira's Doctrine and he can use a wonderful flame. He is the Guardian of Fonia... Yeah!" (??)

"Since his flames are used to hunt the monsters outside, the damage from the monsters is little. I think that he is a wonderful person... if only you don't get involved with him." (??)

“Stop it. I don’t really want to hear that name.” (??)

Whether everyone panicked when the talk of the Holy Knight came out, they diverted their eyes as if to say that they didn’t want to get involved.

According to Ashley, he seemed to do whatever he wanted with his Spirit magic, and I had a feeling that the residents were afraid, regardless of Mira’s Doctrine.

There were times when Reus grasped his fist while listening to some of the tragedies caused by the Holy Knight, maybe he couldn’t forgive him.

“That Holy Knight is a really cruel person. I will kill him if Aniki allows me.” (Reus)

“But, isn’t he reducing the damage to the town by defeating the monsters outside? He is also said to be the protector, so it’s not good to show your hands just because there will be no problems if you defeat him.” (Reese)

“At least, I think that he is an enemy to us, since we are on Ashley’s side. Just like Sirius-sama has told us, let’s not get involved as much as possible.” (Emilia)

Walking down the street with a little bit of caution, we noticed that the corner of a place was getting noisy.

There were a lot of people who liked entertainment, but from the expressions of the people gathered, it didn’t seem to be for something fun.

While we were puzzled, Reus, who was eating a sandwich, talked to a person nearby.

“Did something happened?” (Reus)

“Hmm? Aah... It’s Holy Knight-sama.” (??)

“The Holy Knight? What, is he popular enough to attract such attention?” (Reus)

“That’s not it. We were being gathered.” (??)

Since the person who talked to him shifted sideways a bit, we were able to see the situation at the center.

Over there... there was a figure of a woman sitting in the center of the square. On the

other side, there was a red-haired man wearing a splendid robe clad with dazzling ornaments.

“...Who is that? He is wearing an unusually luxurious attire.” (Reus)

“Are you an outsider? That is the Holy Knight, and this gathering is to make an example of a traitor. It is starting from today, so be careful that you might be aimed at if you say bad things.” (??)

Apparently, the man who was wearing a splendid robe was the Holy Knight.

I only heard cruel stories, but since he was someone who can use Spirit Magic like me, I thought that I would like to see him, even for a bit, but... that was a mistake.

In front of that woman, a cold smile was looking down on her... which saw a human nothing but a thing. It was exactly like the thinking of noble ruler.

“Wait, please stop! I am a believer who swore loyalty to Mira-sama! I never betrayed the Mira’s Doctrine—...” (??)

“It doesn’t matter what you are. I was told to deal with you right here, and I don’t care, even if you beg for your life.” (Holy Knight)

When the Holy Knight swung his arm up while murmuring a word, a big flame popped on top of his head.

He didn’t chant, and from the point of creating a flame just by saying a word, there was no mistake that he was a user of Spirit Magic.

“Aa, aah... Mira-sama... Ashley... I’m sorry.” (??)

“Mira-sama has decided. This flame of judgment will rain down upon you. Well then, will you accept it according to the oracle?” (Holy Knight)

The Holy Knight, then, swung down his arm, and a violently burning flame was released upon the woman.

That person, could she be Ashley’s...

“Please... [Aqua Wall].” (Reese)

When I noticed, I already asked the Spirits and had created a wall of Water in front of the lady.

As expected, my compatibility against an opponent with Fire was good. The wall of Water I had created not only completely stopped the flame, but it also extinguished it.

“Reese-ane!?” (Reus)

“I thought so...” (Emilia)

“So-sorry! But... according to Ashley, that person is surely someone who got caught instead of her.” (Reese)

Yesterday, Ashley had sadly talked about someone who was captured as a decoy in order to let her escaped and that was before she met Chris.

And she was like a sister to Ashley. She had similar features to what I had heard from Ashley.

If that person was burned, Ashley would definitely grieve.

She would lament that she could do nothing other than give oracles.

In the past, I was only good at Water Magic.

Although we were both totally different, we were called ‘Saintess’ altogether, and somehow I overlapped myself with Ashley.

And... if the woman who was about to be burn was Ane-sama... When I thought that, my body instinctively moved.

“Both of you, run. This is my responsibility... so I will do something.” (Reese)

“There is no way we’re leaving Reese-ane. Right, Nee-chan?” (Reus)

“Yes, of course. Besides, it’s still alright, Reese. That guy doesn’t know who did it.” (Emilia)

Emilia was right. Since we were far away from the Holy Knight, he was looking around without knowing I was the one who did it.

We were talking in low voices, so people around us didn't seem to know that it was me.

And then, the smiling Emilia and Reus stood in the way to hid me from the Holy Knight.

"Can he not perceive the mana from the way he manipulates that splendid flame? It was prevented by Reese-ane's spell, I guess he is not that strong, huh?" (Reus)

"That's not it. I managed to stop the flame earlier, but the truth is, the flame is too strong and there are only a few Water Spirits in the surrounding area. Because of that, the mana consumption was huge. It is going to be difficult for a prolonged-battle." (Reese)

"There is no need to fight. If we can run away like this, we are still not breaking our promise to Sirius-sama. Since it will become an uproar before long, let's take the opportunity and run away." (Emilia)

Certainly, if we escaped like this, we wouldn't have to fight. We kept waiting quietly while looking at the surrounding reactions.

"Who prevented my flame just now!? Come out!" (Holy Knight)

The Holy Knight became frustrated. As he confirmed that there was no reaction, he raised both hands at the same time while smacking his lips.

Thereupon, the same flame as the earlier one was brought forth, and since the flames flew around the head of the Holy Knight towards the surrounding people, the people who were at the gathering had started to retreat.

"If you are not coming out, I will force you to do so!" (Holy Knight)

"Now! Let's take advantage of the chaos and escape to the outside of the town." (Reus)

"But, the flames that are surrounding the people..." (Reese)

"If that's the case, Reese concentrate on making those flames ineffective. Reus will hold Reese." (Emilia)

"Leave it to me." (Reus)

Yeah... if it was like that, I could concentrate on the flames.

When Reus turned his back, I entrusted my body, but since the flames started to indiscriminately attack people, I created multiple water bubbles and offset each other.

The surrounding people ran away and at the same time, we tried to move accordingly, but Reus, who was holding me, stopped his steps. When I looked, Emilia, who was on the side, also stopped her steps and displayed caution.

[I can feel it... The blue-haired woman over there! Goodness... Don't you remember how to detect mana?]" (??)

After offsetting all of the flames, I redirected my consciousness, and there was a whole body burning in a bright red color, and a wolf-like monster was standing. It could probably be said that the flames symbolized a wolf.

It was about the same size as Hokuto. It had a somewhat similar air, but it was clearly hostile and talked using people's words. And my body was naturally becoming stiff because of the hostility.

"Shut up, if I have my flames, there is no problem, even if I can't detect it." (Holy Knight)

[Hmmp... what a fool.] (??)

When I noticed that there was no one around us, we were already sandwiched between the Holy Knight and the flaming monster.

It was certain that we had been exposed, but there was no time to regret it now. The Holy Knight was a definite, and that flaming monster also seemed to be considerably strong. Since Reus was obviously cautious, he dropped me and pulled his greatsword.

"Well, who are you people? Based on your appearances, are you adventurers." (Holy Knight)

"That's right. Are you the Holy Knight of Mira's Doctrine?" (Emilia)

"Use the honorific, -sama. No need. Why don't you let me burn you?" (Holy Knight)

"Can we not conclude until that point? Besides, rather than the honorific -sama, or the official position, shouldn't you give us your name? Since I don't know your name,

please let us know. Can you hear me... Sirius-sama?" (Emilia)

While Emilia deliberately prolonged the conversation, she contacted Sirius-san with her hand on the choker.

As Reus gave full attention to the flaming monster, I concentrated my mana so that Water could be created in preparation for the flames of the Holy Knight.

The Holy Knight, who heard Emilia, was smiling and clapped his hands as if something was funny.

"Hahaha, that's true. Well, shall I give you my name? I am Vagle(2). As you can see, I am a Holy Knight who uses Fire Spirit Magic." (Vagle)

"Thank you very much for your kindness. We..." (Emilia)

"I don't need it. I only have business with that blue-haired woman. I don't care about the rest." (Vagle)

"...Me?" (Reese)

"I'm sorry. I have met the aforementioned Holy Knight." (Emilia)

The man called Vagle was happily laughing while pointing at me. Emilia informed Sirius-san about the current situation during that gap.

"You were erasing my flame, right? It looks like you can use a considerably powerful Water Magic." (Vagle)

"That... what? Could you probably have complaints because your flame was extinguished?" (Reese)

"I have a complaint, but it doesn't matter now. You... become my underling." (Vagle)

...When I thought what he was going to say, was that a solicitation?

Although he acted like he was being hated by people, I thought that there was no way people would obediently agree with that condescending attitude.

"No, I don't really need a reply. I will just force you. Oh Flame, burn them!" (Vagle)



“Oh Water... [Aqua Pillar]” (Reese)

Since he shot Fire without even waiting for a reply, I also created a pillar of Water and offset the fire.

As expected... my invocation was a bit dull since the Water Spirits were few, and I couldn't see them, so I judged that the Water Spirits couldn't come closer because there were too many Fire Spirits.

Nevertheless, the flame that was released wasn't doing something only to us, Vagle had spread his flames without purpose to the surroundings and tried to burn unrelated things and people.

“By protecting unrelated people, I understand that you are soft-hearted. How about this? If you come to me, I will stop this.” (Vagle)

Although that was a cowardly action, his head seemed to be functioning. I wanted to clear all of the flames, but the fountain in the square was already dry. By creating water out of nowhere, the best I could do was guard against the flames before me.

Even if there was some rain, the flames of that degree weren't likely to disappear. If there was at least a river nearby, I could call over a lot of water and cover the whole area.

While frustratedly offsetting the flames, a huge wind suddenly wrapped us and Vagle, trying to scatter the flames that were spreading to the surroundings.

“Reese! I will cover the flames around me with wind. You concentrate on your opponent!” (Emilia)

“My opponent is that guy!” (Reus)

“Thank you!” (Reese)

Since Emilia generated a wide range tornado, it seemed that the damage was somehow suppressed.

Reus, then, brandished his greatsword and slashed the flaming monster.

[Hou, what a powerful Silver Wolfkin. Are you going to take me on?] (??)

“Compared to Hokuto-san, you are not a big deal!” (Reus)

Like Reus said, Hokuto seemed to be stronger, but I judged that it was an opponent that we shouldn’t be careless about.

The flaming monster leaped in order to avoid the greatsword that was swung down, but Reus immediately turned his wrist and slashed it.

[...Hmm!?] (??)

“Here I come!” (Reus)

The flaming monster was shaken by the unimaginable continuous assault from that greatsword, and Reus gradually drove it into a corner.

And when Reus finally seized the opponent, his greatsword slashed the forefoot, but...

“Next is... Eh!?” (Reus)

[You are quite strong, but... it’s meaningless to me.] (??)

A flame spewed out from the place where it was slashed, and the forefoot was restored as if nothing had happened.

“If that’s the case, I will shred it until you can’t regenerate!” (Reus)

[Like I’ve said, it is impossible. I am the Fire Wolf, Enrou. As long as there is fire, I can regenerate no matter how many times you attack.] (Enrou)

“Because of that, I can bring out as many flames as I need. In other words, we are invincible with the dog there.” (Vagle)

[I disliked partnering with you, but this is interesting.] (Enrou)

“I guess your Fire Wolf is invincible, but you are not, right?” (Emilia)

Even if Vagle could use powerful Spirit Magic, he was similar to us. In truth, I could compensate it with my magic, so it was a bit funny to call himself invincible.

Locking my eyes with Emilia’s, we planned to proceed at the same time, but at that

moment... a huge amount of mana was released by Vagle.

“My flame is a flame that burns everything. The thing about being surrounded by wind makes you unable to run away! Oh Flame... Burn everything!” (Vagle)

At that moment, a flame spurt over a wide range from his feet, and turned into a sea of fire.

I quickly covered Emilia and Reus with a ball of water to prevent the flames, and when I tried to defend myself at the end, I was blown into the air.

After a slight floating feeling, a violent impact rushed into my body when I hit the ground. And then, I noticed that the Fire Wolf was holding me by my neck and brought me next to Vagle.

“Excellent, you had a hard time.” (Vagle)

[Hmmmph, it will be troublesome to proceed with a battle more than this.] (Enrou)

“Le-let me go! What are you planning to do!?” (Reese)

“What do you mean? I’m just going to bring you home.” (Vagle)

“No! Let me—... Auu!” (Reese)



When I tried to struggle, the Fire Wolf stepped on my back with its forefoot, and pressed me against the ground.

When I turned my head, while wondering why the forefoot didn't feel hot, the Fire Wolf's body had apparently become much larger than before, and its mana had also increased more than earlier.

Perhaps... it was absorbing the Fire Spirits?

[Don't try to struggle. The me right now will probably crush you under my feet.]  
(Enrou)

"Aah, if you do that, don't ask the Spirits again. On the contrary, just relax." (Vagle)

[I know it. So, don't move.] (Enrou)

"U, uu...." (Reese)

I anticipated this, but it was a really unpleasant situation.

My body was naturally trembling when I felt the enormous mana through my back. Perhaps, it might be stronger than Hokuto.

It was my fault... to be in such a situation.

But, if I didn't protect that person, I would absolutely regret it.

What should I have done... at that time?

"Reese!" (Emilia)

"Reese-ane!" (Reus)

Not good... Sorry for troubling you guys.

Although our surroundings weren't burning, the place where Emilia and Reus stood was burning with flames.

My water that protected them wouldn't last long, and since I didn't have much mana left, I would definitely run out of mana if I tried to extinguish the flames.

I guessed... there was no other way around it.

“I-I will go! I will go with you, so erase the flames! And save them!” (Reese)

“Nope. This fellow really likes to burn, and it’s troublesome since it doesn’t really want to disappear. If it is absolutely necessary, I will keep watching it until it disappears by itself.” (Vagle)

This person... only used the Spirits to burn things?

He didn’t use them in any other way. He just burned and violently released them.

For this person to be similar as me and Fia... it was sad.

“Water... please...” (Reese)

Concentrating the remaining mana I had, I was able to create water and erased the flames.

I felt my body getting heavier as the mana lessened within me, but apparently, I was able to keep my consciousness. In this situation, I should avoid losing consciousness.

“Ooh, you can do it, huh? From now on, you will erase my Flame, I will depend on you, alright?” (Vagle)

“Leave... them alone.” (Reese)

“Aah, it’s alright. Besides, this is my collar of forgiveness. There is no meaning if you don’t have mana to produce water, haha!” (Vagle)

Whether that made him feel better, he accepted my request.

The Fire Wolf probably felt that it didn’t need to detain me. It removed its forefoot from my back and stepped towards Emilia and Reus.

[Just as he said. I will overlook this if you do not fight back.] (Enrou)

“Damn it... Reese-ane...” (Reus)

“Reese...” (Emilia)

Since they vexingly gripped their fists, I smiled to make them not worry.

[Uuh, not good!] (Enrou)

When I thought why the Fire Wolf suddenly shouted, it threw itself at Vagle.

It looked considerably desperate, and while Vagle, who received the full-on body slam, was blown away, it rolled and went into the shadow of a building.

“Bastard! What are you doing!?” (Vagle)

[Idiot! Someone is attacking!] (Enrou)

When I was wondering why the Fire Wolf moved while shouting, the place where it stood earlier exploded and hollowed out.

[I can’t feel any signs or smells! Let’s leave! Quickly!] (Enrou)

“Oh, oi! Don’t forget the woman there!” (Vagle)

[What a troublesome fellow!] (Enrou)

The Fire Wolf headed towards me, but the unknown assaults were unleashed several times towards the Fire Wolf in order to protect me. However, the Fire Wolf approached me while avoiding the assault with its quick movement.

And at the moment when the Fire Wolf opened its mouth to carry me, an attack directly hit the body of the Fire Wolf.

[Ughh!?] (Enrou)

A part of its body was lost as a result of a direct hit, but the flames immediately spewed out and its body regenerated.

It seemed that there was damage because it looked a bit painful, but as it grabbed my collar, the attacks stopped at the same time.

[I was wondering what kind of attack it was... but it is surprising with just that amount of mana. It seems that you can’t help this girl.] (Enrou)

The Fire Wolf lifted me in order to display me, and then, it started walking towards Vagle.

And while I was being carried away without being able to do anything...

[Reese... don't let out your voice.] (Sirius)

I heard Sirius-san's voice through magic.

What was this...? Even by just calling my name, my heart, which seemed to be crushed by anxiety, got better.

I was about to scream Sirius-san's name without thinking, but I closed my mouth before they could hear me.

[I'm sorry, it seems that rescuing you is a bit difficult as it is. I never thought that there was an opponent with the same ability as Hokuto.] (Sirius)

No, Sirius-san did nothing wrong. This was my own mistake.

[I have heard the situation from Emilia and Reus. First off, it is regrettable that the situation has become like this, but I have something to say to Reese.] (Sirius)

The reason why they strangely put off the struggle was because Sirius-san told them to do so.

So... what was the thing he wanted to tell me?

[Certainly, Reese has done something unsuitable about our situation. But, you did nothing wrong.] (Sirius)

Aah... Eh?

[It is not a bad thing to save a life that can be saved. I think that is one of your merits. It can also be said about me, because this time, I was too late to get the information about that monster called the Fire Wolf, and there were a lot of misjudgments.] (Sirius)

As Sirius-san mentioned various coping methods, I felt like hanging my head down. I didn't have that kind of ability.



And above all, he told me that my action wasn't bad... I was happy.

When I realized it, my tears were already overflowing.

[Well, all I can do for now is this, but I will give a complete remonstrance when this is over. Now, be obediently caught and reflect about this situation. Emilia and Reus have somehow agreed to this.] (Sirius)

I was convinced that they had frustrated expressions on their faces. I guessed that much was proven... right?

[I will head out right away, but I will keep in touch with you every so often. If I am going to attack, or do something, I will give a signal by magic or immediately contact you. I will come, even if I have to force my way through with Hokuto.] (Sirius)

It's fine. Only... Sirius-san... forgave me.

As much as attacking, I would also spend all my mana and sweep things away with water.

[I will definitely rescue you. Please wait until then.] (Sirius)

Yes, I would do my best with your words.

And I would be waiting... for you to come.



— Sirius —

“Sirius-sama!” (Emilia)

“Aniki!” (Reus)

After Reese was taken away, I called the siblings to an alley that couldn't be seen by other people and tried to reconcile information.

Since they came close to me with frustrating faces at the same time, I stroked their heads first.

“Emilia, Reus. You both endured well. I have asked you to endure the scene of seeing her off.” (Sirius)

“No, although I am frustrated, I couldn’t win against that Fire Wolf. Sirius-sama’s decision wasn’t wrong.” (Emilia)

“Yeah, that wasn’t a mistake, Aniki. But now, it is about Reese-ane. We should quickly rescue her!” (Reus)

“Don’t worry. I am preparing for that moment to come.” (Sirius)

Reese had been taken away, and it hadn’t been an hour yet. I contacted her once earlier. She was trapped in a place that seemed to be a guest room and she had no restraints. Apparently, she was alright because she had already calmed down.

More importantly, the problem was that Fire Wolf.

Although it was reinforced with Fire Spirits, I didn’t expect that it could perceive and avoid my long range attack, [Snipe].

The speed of that spell exceeded the speed of sound, but it was avoided at the same time as I unleashed it. Did it have some kind of wild intuition? Well, Hokuto also could avoid it... that was acceptable if I considered it as an opponent similar to Hokuto.

“Wait... let’s go to the temple without talking about this anymore! Reese-ane was kidnapped, and doesn’t Aniki feel frustrated!?” (Reus)

“Reus...” (Sirius)

“Hiii!?” (Reus)

That was no good, I instinctively stared at Reus.

It was frustrating, but the mistake this time wasn’t only about Reese protecting the woman, but it was also my miscalculations.

However...

“Do... you think that I am not frustrated when Reese got kidnapped?” (Sirius)

I was also irritated at myself, but more importantly, I couldn't forgive that lowlife and the animal for kidnapping Reese.

I would surely... clean this up.

"No-nooooo!?" (Reus)

"That is Sirius-sama!" (Emilia)

After that, while Reus was unusually scared, and Emilia was quietly waiting with shining eyes, I felt a sign of person approaching us.

The reaction seemed different, but I didn't feel any hostility. When I turned around, a woman in a slightly tattered attire appeared.

"Aah... I'm sorry" (??)

"You are..." (Sirius)

"Are you the one who almost got burned by that bastard?" (Reus)

"Ye-yes! My name is Amanda. I wanted to say thank you for helping me, but because of me, your companion got kidnapped... So, I don't know what I should say..." (Amanda)

While running away, it seemed that she heard who helped her out. And when she tried to move away from the crowd, she unexpectedly found us.

"For her to be kidnapped is also because my own mistake, and I don't want you to worry about it. By the way, do you know Ashley?" (Sirius)

"You know Ashley!?" (Amanda)

Like what Reese had said, Amanda looked like a sister to Ashley.

I thought about the possibility of her of being a spy or a fake, but she seemed to be the real thing after questioning her about Ashley, and then, we told her about the circumstances of saving Ashley.

"Aah... That's great. That child is alright..." (Amanda)

“You can see her later, but there is something I want to ask you.” (Sirius)

“Everyone is the benefactors who saved Ashley and me. In the name of Mira-sama, tell me anything, if I can do it.” (Amanda)

“Together with these two, I want you to go under and find the believers who are fighting against the current Mira’s Doctrine.” (Sirius)

To be honest, I thought that it was worthwhile that Reese rescued her.

I knew about the place where the believers who fought against the current Mira’s Doctrine from the informer, and it was troublesome for us to get inside.

It was dangerous to bring Ashley in, and I wanted to protect them from the outside as much as possible, since I hate being selfish. I was thinking about breaking through, but if she was there, it should be smooth to get inside.

“You guys go with Amanda, and tell the believers that the Saintess is safe. It will probably raise their morale, and that will make it easier for future actions to take place.” (Sirius)

“I will be escorting her, right? Is Sirius-sama going to save Reese?” (Emilia)

“I want to go, too! I want to save Reese-ane!” (Sirius)

“Since they know your faces, that’s no good. I’m planning to go directly.” (Sirius)

By kidnapping Reese, those guys clearly became my enemy.

Because of that, I want to visit their ‘General’, Dolgar, at least once.

Let say, this incident happened because of Vagle’s recklessness, I won’t be satisfied if I didn’t know the other side to whom he corresponded with.

“But, it is difficult for mere adventurers to enter the temple. Even for believers, like us, if Ashley is not in the vicinity, we will not get permission to enter the center of the temple.” (Amanda)

“Not a problem, as for the envoy... Aah there you are.” (Sirius)

When I turned around, the person I called... Fia was walking towards us with some luggage.

By flying in the sky, she arrived very quickly. Incidentally, I had already explained the situation to her.

“That cocky child... I’d like to properly confirm it with my own eyes.” (Fia)

I noticed that Fia was quite angry from the low and chilly voice that I heard through [Call].

As a companion who could also see Spirits, it was natural to treat her like a younger sister.

“Thank you for waiting. I wonder if Reese is safe.” (Fia)

“Aah, I checked her a while ago, but there doesn’t seem to be a problem.” (Sirius)

“Fia-ane!? Why are you here?” (Reus)

“Of course, I am here because Sirius called me. Yes, it’s fine with this, right?” (Fia)

Actually, Fia... was illegally trespassing into the town.

In order for her to come as soon as possible, I informed her of the location of the castle wall, which could hardly be noticeable. Hence, she entered the town by secretly flying in the sky.

And then, I spread the luggage out that Fia had passed over. It was the luxurious clock embedded with Elysion’s crest.

“That is Lifell-sama’s...” (Emilia)

“Yes, it is. This is a matter of Reese, so I’m going to use this without reserve.” (Sirius)

I got this from Lifell-hime in the past. It was evidence of being a Guard to the future Queen... In other words, it was a reservation mantle.

If I wore this, I would be welcomed, not as a mere adventurer, but as a Messenger of Elysion.

“I will go with you, too. Look, if there is a rare Elf, the credibility of being an envoy is better, right?” (Fia)

“I’ll depend on you. So, I’m going to the temple right now. I will gather information and rescue Reese. Incidentally, by kidnapping you guys, I will teach them the fear of being an opponent who really turned Elysion into an enemy.” (Sirius)

Well... even if they decided to obediently return Reese, I had already decided not to simply end this situation.

Of course, I didn’t mean to say that Reese was the King’s daughter.

She was known as a Saintess, even in Elysion.

After giving instructions to everyone, I wore the mantle of a Guard.

“Well then... shall we get this started?” (Sirius)



### **Presenting Hokuto** – telling the situation

Hokuto-kun was waiting for his Master’s return in the forest that was a little distance away from Fonia.

Fia-san was practicing magic, while talking and getting along well with Ashley-chan.

And as a burning Knight, Chris-kun was training while waiting.

However, since he didn’t know what would happen, he was doing some light training now.

“Fuh! Fuh!” (Chris)

Hokuto-kun was sitting and watching Chris-kun, who was swinging a sword according to what his Master taught him. He thought about helping a little, so he went in front of Chris-kun.

“Fuh! ...Hmmm? What’s wrong, Hokuto-san?” (Chris)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun made a signal ‘Come at me’ while waving his right forefoot.

“...Aah!? Could it be that you want to become my training partner?” (Chris)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Thank you very much. Well then... Here I come!” (Chris)

Chris-kun held the wooden sword and swung it down towards Hokuto-kun.

But, Hokuto-kun didn’t show any signs to avoid the swing. He hit the wooden sword from the side with the right front paw, and...

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Huh!?” (Chris)

A paw punch was thrown down, and Chris-kun was hit from the head. It had strangely extended to the ground’s surface.

“Woof! Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Ye-yes, sorry!? I don’t really understand you, but I’m sorry!” (Chris)

Since Hokuto-kun seemed to be angry, Chris-kun apologize while kneeling down on the ground.

Perhaps, if he was going to do it, he probably wanted to say to do it more seriously. If he was in a bad mood, because he’s a wolf, he would have experienced... death.

“N-next, I will do it seriously!” (Chris)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Chris-kun, who had a bit of a sense of crisis, seriously swung the wooden sword this time.

As expected, he was at a miserable level, compared to his Master and Reus-kun, but it

was worthwhile to continue the training. Maybe he could win against an average adventurer.

A continuous attack came, and...

“Ha! Ha!” (Chris)

“...Fuah.” (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun handled everything with only his right forefoot.

To tell the truth, he was getting sleepy, but he didn't expose that fact since Chris-kun was desperately trying. Hokuto-kun was a gentleman.

After handling twenty attacks, Chris-kun was hit on the ground again by Hokuto-kun's paw punch.

“Chris-kun!?” (Ashley)

“It's fine if it is Hokuto. He can properly go easy on someone. Even Reus will be like that.” (Fia)

As expected, Reus-kun fought Hokuto-kun while using his whole body, but he was also a top-notch training partner. Hokuto-kun was all-purpose.

And then, while taking a break, Hokuto-kun turned around as if he noticed something.

Although he couldn't feel any smell or sign, he felt an uncomfortable feeling from the direction where his Master had headed towards.

That made him unintentionally want to see him, but he wouldn't leave this place due to the order of his Master.

“What's wrong, Hokuto-san!?” (Chris)

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun said it was nothing and resumed training with Chris-kun again.

At that time... Hokuto-kun didn't realize that he had a hunch.



That the time for battle was approaching...

# Chapter 89

## A Secret Visit after a Visit

After separating from Emilia, Reus and Amanda, Fia and I headed to the temple, which was the main headquarters of Mira's Doctrine, located at the center of the town.

As Fia walked next to me, she didn't cover her head with the hood attached to the mantle and grandly exposed her beautiful face, and we gathered the attention of the believers and adventurers who were walking around. It went without saying that most of them were men.

Some people tried to call Fia out because they were attracted her rare and good looks, but, as they walked by, their shoulders were sliced with wind, and they gave up when they realized that I was wearing a mantle that could only be worn by the upper class.

"The lady over there. The place where you're going is the temple of Mira's Doctrine. Perhaps, you are interested in Mira's Doctrine? If you are fine with me, shall I teach you various things?" (??)

There were also believers talking about Mira's Doctrine amongst them, but the man, who appeared before us, had eyes that were obviously aiming for Fia.

Towards such a man, Fia slightly lowered her head with a businesslike smile.

"I refuse. I can't move beyond the order of this one here." (Fia)

It seemed that she was already trying to be a character of my secretary.

The other side faltered by Fia's businesslike manner, but this time, he changed his mind and turned his eyes to me.

He probably wanted to include me in the conversation, perhaps he judged that she would come if I came...

"Excuse me, if it's alright, about Mira's Doctrine... Hiii!?" (??)

When he saw my eyes contained with bloodlust, he ran away with all his power.

Fia, who was next to me, laughed a bit, since I snorted as if to say that we would not stop walking due to trivial matters.

“Hehe... although we looked calm, let’s get heated when we get inside.” (Fia)

“Of course. I will quickly teach them the sin of laying their hands on Reese.” (Sirius)

There was a high possibility that elites would be sent from Elysion by the orders of the King and Liefell-hime, and that wasn’t a joke. Mira’s Doctrine would be destroyed, and even if Ashley returned, it would be impossible to rebuild.

Besides, I didn’t know what was happening to Reese under the clutches of those lowlives. Since I became concerned, should I confirm with [Call] again before entering?

“Reese, how is it going?” (Sirius)

[...Yes. I am trapped in a room, but I am safe. Since the outside is somewhat noisy, it seems that they are not in a situation to pay attention to me.] (Reese)

According to Reese, after being taken away to the temple, she seemed to be imprisoned in a certain room.

It would be a strange story for them to suddenly leave her alone, but when they returned to the temple, Vagle was summoned by a man wearing a gorgeous robe; apparently he was being taken away.

He was being taken obediently, maybe because that man was the Archbishop, Dolgar.

“It is almost time to visit the temple, please be patient, alright?” (Sirius)

[Yes! I’ll be waiting.] (Reese)

She didn’t seem to be scared or anxious with that kind of voice. At least, it looked like it was unnecessary to forcefully breakthrough at the present moment.

Since there was still a distance away to the temple, I talked about Spirit Magic with Fia while walking.

Specifically, the reason why Reese lost.

“Say, Fia, does the power of Spirit Magic change according to the number of Spirits in the surroundings?” (Sirius)

“Yeah. The more Spirits of the same attribute, the stronger the power and the faster the spells will be activated.” (Fia)

To begin with, the Spirits were activated by the users when they gave mana to the Spirits, and they would lend their strength to cast spells. And the Spirit seemed to have the habit of cooperating with the same Spirits who were nearby.

“I thought of it when I flew earlier, but there seems to be very few Wind Spirits around here. It was enough with ten mana in the past, but I feel like I need fifteen here.” (Fia)

“Reese also mentioned that there were very few Water Spirits, so is there a lot of Fire Spirits around here?” (Sirius)

“I can only see Wind Spirits, but I don’t think that is a mistake. I talked about it before, if I use Spirit Magic, I can activate the Spirits enough to use it, and the number of the same Spirits will increase to the surroundings.” (Fia)

For example, each time Wind Spirit Magic was invoked, the Wind Spirits were activated, and they would call Spirits with the same attribute. In proportion to that, other attributes were said to move away from the spot to escape. Of course, there seemed to be a limit of convergence. Hence, it appeared that the place couldn’t be completely filled with the same Spirits. According to a certain book, the Spirits unconsciously maintained the balance of the world, but it was unknown whether that fact was correct or not.

And Vagle always used Spirit Magic to exterminate monsters in the surroundings of Fonia as a cover of venting his anger.

“That man, Vagle, often used Spirit Magic, right? Then, I guess that there are many Fire Spirits around here.” (Fia)

“...Even with just a few Spirits, if there is a monster at the same level as Hokuto, it can’t be helped for them to be defeated...” (Sirius)

Maybe, if there was no Fire Wolf, Reese would have definitely won with the condition

of the same amount of Spirits. However, in a situation where we could fight with equal terms in this world, the match would be decided by how it plays or rules.

The disciples became stronger, and if all three of them were together, I judged that they would be fine, unless it was with a group of Advanced grade adventurers or a legendary monster.

When I reflected on my assumption that it was a bit of an overestimation, Fia poked my shoulder with narrowed eyes.

“Hey, you don’t need to feel down. It is bad for Reese, but this time, that is the consequence because that child had decided on her own.” (Fia)

“It’s not that I am depressed, but the fact is I was a bit careless. I don’t want it to happen again, next time.” (Sirius)

“See it positively. I wonder if you are worrying too much. But you know, there is also a part that you can’t understand in anyway because you can’t see Spirits, so the ones who should properly grasp it are Reese and me. Since we feel relieved if Sirius stands behind us, please stay with us as usual.” (Fia)

“I guess so. Thanks, Fia.” (Sirius)

“Hehe, you’re welcome. I am the Onee-chan when looking at this situation.” (Fia)

I felt the reliance by Fia’s smile as if to say to entrust it to her, while lightly closing one eye.



And then, we came before Mira’s Temple, which was the center of Mira’s Doctrine.

There were a lot of Mira’s Doctrine symbols, which were attached at the summit of the building when I looked at the temple of Mira’s Doctrine.

Even though there was no king, from the point of having this degree of large structure, the scale of Mira’s Doctrine might be beyond my expectations.

According to Ashley, there was a huge chapel, if we went through the huge main entrance of the temple. It seemed that the ordinary believers would enter up to that

point.

Next to the main entrance, there seemed to be a residential section at the end of the door, which was large enough for two people to pass through and there was no one that could enter it, except high-ranked believers.

Understandably, there were two standing believers guarding the entrance. They talked to us when we slowly approached them.

“Only Mira’s Doctrine officials are allowed to enter. If you come to pray to Mira-sama, please go to that chapel.” (Guard)

“I urgently request a meeting with a person who is managing Mira’s Doctrine. Please relay the message.” (Sirius)

“I haven’t heard of such an arrangement. Since Archbishop-sama is busy, please make an appointment by talking to the believer in the chapel.” (Guard)

Although it seemed likely to be rejected by an extremely obvious response, I showed the crest of Elysion depicted on the mantle to the believer.

Well, it was time for bluffing from now on.

“I am an Imperial Guard of Melifest Continent Elysion’s next Queen, Lifell-sama. I came to Fonia as an envoy of such a person.” (Sirius)

“Wh-what...?” (Guard)

“However, I lost sight of an escort subject when I took my eyes away. According to the people in the town, I heard that the subject was taken away by a man called the Holy Knight of Mira’s Doctrine. A girl who has beautiful blue hair and is one head smaller than me, don’t you know about it?” (Sirius)

“N-no... I...” (Guard)

At first, they were looking at us with a suspicious look, but when I mentioned the characteristics of Reese, a change in facial expressions was seen.

It seemed that there was a high possibility that she passed through here with Vagle. Should I press for an answer while they were being agitated?

“I personally want to hear whether that person didn’t come here. If I can’t have the meeting, I will have no choice to report to Elysion that I was refused by Mira’s Doctrine.” (Sirius)

“Ple—... please wait a moment!” (Guard)

I wasn’t sure whether the name of Elysion reached here, but with a splendid mantle depicted with an emblem, my dignified attitude, and bringing a rare elf, it would be difficult for a guard to arbitrarily decide that we were fake.

One of the believers, who couldn’t decide, remained on the spot, while the other one went into the temple and looked for confirmation.

The remaining guard didn’t relax his attitude, as if to say that he was clearly in a higher position. He kept waiting calmly while crossing his arms. And then, they seemed to get the permission to let us have a meeting with the Archbishop.



“Co-come on in. Archbishop-sama is waiting for you in the room.” (Guard)

We left our weapons midway, and as we kept walking in the temple, headed by a strangely nervous believer, Fia and I were guided into a room at the innermost part of the temple. When I used [Search] along the way, I found that Reese was in the building in the courtyard of the temple.

“I walked quite far, but what kind of room is this?” (Sirius)

“Well... this is also Archbishop-sama’s office, and it also serves as a meeting room with those who have fitting status. Holy Knight-sama is waiting inside, too.” (Guard)

The believer quickly left after saying that. So, I knocked on the door of the room, while raising my vigilance, and entered the room after getting a reply.

“Welcome, guests from Elysion.” (Dolgar)

When I entered the room, in front of a large desk that could fit nearly ten people, and likely to be used for conference, there were the Archbishop and a man sitting on chairs and smiling.





His age was probably, forty years old? Wearing a luxurious robe, his appearance with a gentle smile and dignified beard made him look like a kind old man who raised pocket money for his grandchildren.

He seemed to match with Ashley's explanation. He didn't look like a man who was in charge of Mira's Doctrine, but I didn't fail to notice his sharp-looking eyes observing us the moment we entered the room.

Vagle, who I verified from a far distance not long ago, was standing by the Archbishop's side without an expression. As I sat down on a chair, while searching for traps, I started with my self-introduction.

"Nice to meet you. I am Sirius, an Imperial Guard of Elysion's next Queen." (Sirius)

"The Queen's guard, and... you are, Sirius? Certainly, that's the name of the winner who won the Fighting Festival the other day..." (Dolgar)

"Yes, that's me. But now, I am coming here as the Guard of the Elysion's next Queen. Although you looked busy, it seems that I asked for a sudden meeting." (Sirius)

"No, not only the famous Elysion, you're also the Champion of the Fighting Festival, so there is no reason to refuse you. It's a bit late, but my name is Dolgar. I am the Archbishop of Mira's Doctrine." (Dolgar)

Since Dolgar reached out for a handshake with a smile, I received that hand.

Hmm... from the circumstances of his hand, it seemed that this man never held a weapon. He was perfect for internal affairs.

And when I introduced Fia by my side, Dolgar directed his eyes toward her.

"This is... what I heard from the guard. You are bringing a beautiful Elf." (Dolgar)

"Yes. She is also my secretary and lover." (Sirius)

"Nice to meet you. My name is Fia." (Fia)

"Ooh... Besides having a beautiful Elf as a lover when you're young, you are also an Imperial Guard of a country and the Champion of the Fighting Festival, huh? It looks like Sirius-sama has exceptional talents." (Dolgar)

It was only until a certain extent, but I could feel the lust in his eyes when he look at Fia.

Unlike Dolgar, Vagle was watching Fia without hiding his worldly desires.

“This is my son, Vagle. He is also the Captain of my guards. Hey, please say hello.”  
(Dolgar)

“I am Vagle. You, you’re taking that beautiful Elf, right?” (Vagle)

“Hey! Don’t say rude things to the guests! Your tone is indecent, you know?!” (Dolgar)

They wanted the same person... these people really were parent and child.

“It’s fine, isn’t it? What’s wrong with saying ‘beautiful’ to a beautiful person? Say Elf-san, rather than that man, I am...” (Vagle)

“I refuse. I am all over Sirius-sama.” (Fia)

Fia made a smile as if to say, ‘Try again’. After that conduct made Vagle’s smile seemingly funny, I noticed sparks were scattering around.

Leaving that matter aside, was Fia trying to imitate Emilia, rather than being a secretary?

Since there seemed to be a feeling of tension, I cleared my throat and asked Dolgar in order to change the mood.

“Which reminds me, you seem to have a girl called a Saintess in Mira’s Doctrine, right? I know a different Saintess from her, but I would like to meet your Saintess once.”  
(Sirius)

“That would be impossible. It’s an embarrassing story, but she is not Mira’s Doctrine Saintess now. We are pursuing her because she is a traitor.” (Dolgar)

“She is being pursued? This is unsettling talk, isn’t it?” (Sirius)

After that, Dolgar talked about the reason why Ashley was supposed to be pursued. It was roughly the same as what Ashley explained.

The difference was I agreed that I didn't well understand about the matter of Saintess, but did he have to explain and ascertain the fact that she was an evil?

"While reaching out to those in trouble with smiles and love, it seemed that she was extorting them, which she claimed to be offerings. Although she is still young, it is a very sad story." (Dolgar)

"Did she frequently do it using Mira's Doctrine as a cover? Of course, Mira-sama also will get angry." (Sirius)

"Mira-sama is a goddess of love and equality, but there is no mercy for those who defile Her. So, it is natural for me to award an oracle that passes judgment to the traitor." (Dolgar)

"Understood. I also won't overlook such a wrongdoer. I will inform you if I find her." (Sirius)

"We haven't caught her since she ran away, so please, if you can cooperate. But, please be sure not to kill her. I will pass an appropriate judgment in front of Mira-sama." (Dolgar)

I consistently gazed at Dolgar's eyebrows and gaze. I was predicting his personality by distinguishing the truth from a slight change in facial expression.

After that, the conversation continued awhile, but since Vagle nearby was starting to get irritated, until it made Dolgar startled to a certain extent; I decided to get into the subject before he exploded.

"Sirius-sama, the matter about Ojou-sama." (Fia)

"Oops... The talk about Mira's Doctrine was so interesting that made me forget about the main subject. I have a habit of getting interested when there is a thing to worry about." (Sirius)

"No, if you are interested with Mira's Doctrine, I will tell you as much as you like. According to the guard who explained it to me earlier, you're looking for someone, right?" (Dolgar)

"Yes, I'm looking for a girl who is known as a Saintess in Elysion. Not only the next Queen of Elysion, she is also an existence favored by the famous Magic Master." (Sirius)

“W-what!?” (Dolgar)

Their expression didn’t change, but I noticed a slight amount of wrinkles had gathered between the eyebrows of the person to whom I explained about Reese.

Not only the whole country, he was a cake addict now, but it seemed that for her to be favored by the Magic Master wasn’t something that can be ignored. By the way, since the Magic Master, Rodwell, and Reese were limited to cakes, I didn’t tell them a lie.

Without answering my question, I pressed for an answer in no time.

“I am under the orders of the next Queen, Lifell-sama, to escort her on a journey of training. However, she has a habit of walking around here and there, like a tomboy, and I lost sight of her while looking away for a bit. As I was looking for her and kept asking in the town, I heard that she was taken by a person called Holy Knight.” (Sirius)

“I see. That is...” (Dolgar)

“If something happened to her, even the Magic Master will get involved. I would like to find her because it has become a serious matter, but have you seen her?” (Sirius)

“Tha-that is...” (Dolgar)

“I don’t know about that.” (Vagle)

I indirectly told them to return Reese. However, Vagle pounded his hand on the desk while glaring at me, seemingly uncomfortable. He clearly refused.

“Wha!? Vagle!?” (Dolgar)

“You suddenly come here, and think I am the kidnapper? Although I haven’t seen her, I am amazed how the Imperial Guard from Elysion fixates upon the matter.” (Vagle)

It would be uncomfortable when suddenly being accused to be a kidnapper, but there were many eyewitnesses in the town, so I felt that the evidence was good enough. Aah, what if he decided to manipulate the information by threatening with fire?

“...Are you sure that you don’t know about this?” (Sirius)

“Yes, of course. There are many blue-haired women anywhere, and I have taken a

different woman.” (Vagle)

“Well then, can I see that woman? I want to confirm whether she was the one I am looking for.” (Sirius)

“Cheh... I already drove her out! She is not here anymore, alright?” (Vagle)

The way he said that was at a childish level. It seemed that something had happened, but I guessed that he was trying to push it through. In fact, he had the power to do so.

Vagle’s mana rose, and apparently, flames were created amongst us. The temperature in the room was slightly high, but it felt like it was going to increase more.

Dolgar tried to stop Vagle, who was behaving recklessly, but he was afraid of flames, so he couldn’t get close.

“Spirit Magic is sometimes troublesome. There are times when I get angry or get into trouble, the Flames come out on their own. So, before my hand slips and burns...” (Vagle)

“Un-understood. If she is not here anymore, I think I’m going to excuse myself.” (Sirius)

Since I also obtained the information, I pretended to give in to the threat and pulled back.

I understood well that he didn’t feel like returning Reese, and as what the informer said, it turned out that Dolgar no longer held the reins of Vagle.

Dolgar was obviously upset when it was said that Reese was related to Elysion and the Magic Master, since he was supposed to talk about her.

I got up after putting my hand on the table. And then, I lowered my head toward the other side.

“As what the Holy Knight has said, I think that I will go look in the town again. I apologize for taking your time.” (Sirius)

“I have no problem in particular. If it’s alright with you, why don’t you pray to Mira-sama in the chapel? Maybe you can find her by Mira-sama’s love.” (Dolgar)

“Do you mean that tomboy? She might have gone outside the town.” (Vagle)

“Shut up!” (Dolgar)

“I see, whatever it is, I’ll put that into consideration. Well then, please excuse me.” (Sirius)

I headed out from the office, while properly taking their words into my mind.



Due to the long talk with Dolgar and Vagle, the outside was dim when I left the temple.

We received the weapons we handed over when we left the temple. While pretending to walk around the town and finding an accommodation, we were talking about future plans.

“You see, Sirius. I thought that this was your matter, but won’t you rescue Reese?” (Fia)

“Of course I will rescue her. I was going to see how they reacted when I told them about the risks of kidnapping Reese.” (Sirius)

“That big kid was angry, instead of being scold.” (Fia)

“No, it is a reaction after we had gone. To tell the truth, I am tapping their voices now.” (Sirius)

Before I left, I set up a special magic stone behind the table and headed out.

I carved a magic formation on that magic stone. When it was activated, it had the characteristics of absorbing ambient sound. It was one of the failures that I made by chance when trying to make the magic formation of [Call].

Since the magic stone continued to stretch by connecting it with a superfine [String], I could hear their conversation around the magic stone when I put the [String] in my ear. In other words, it was a wired bug.

It was very useful, depending on the situation, but once activated, it continued to exhaust the mana within the magic stone. It could stay for one hour, until the mana within was exhausted, and then, it would become an ordinary stone. Even if it was

designed to be able to absorb mana supplied from an external source, it wasn't worth it, since the mana consumption was severe.

Furthermore, the magic stone must stay connected with [String]. Since my chest hurts when considering the price of a rare magic stone, I only made a few of them.

The conversation of those who could be heard from the bug-like device was like this.

[Vagle... what are you thinking?! If you don't return that woman as she is, we're not only making a country as an enemy, but also the Magic Master!] (Dolgar)

[Oioi, if that guy returns to Elysion and informs the Magic Master, how long do you think it will take until they come here?] (Vagle)

[...if that is not possible, what are you planning to do?] (Dolgar)

[Plus, that will be the story if that guy reports it to the country. With my Flames, it is easy to get rid of that guy, you know?] (Vagle)

[But, he is the Champion of the Fighting Festival. Do you think it's easy to dispose him?] (Dolgar)

[Heh! Isn't the Fighting Festival mainly about fighting with weapons? Whatever it is, my Flames are undeniably better.] (Vagle)

[Well, it is surely true, but...] (Volgar)

[Besides, if I can handle that man, you can also get that Elf. I know that you have been fascinated, right?] (Vagle)

[Hmm... there is no other way, then. But, don't do it in the middle of the town. Since the Champion of the Fighting Festival is an outsider, it is difficult to erase the evidence.] (Dolgar)

[You're noisy, and don't get in my way! I've been following your orders until now!] (Vagle)

[I am the one who picked you up and raised you until now! It would be natural to listen to what your parent says! Besides, you are doing something out of my orders these days. Do you know how difficult it is for me to deal with your troubles!?!] (Dolgar)

[The one who told me that I could do anything with my Flames was you, right? Although I am practicing it, why should I be yelled at or disturbed!?] (Vagle)

[Don't you understand that there is a limit!? Everything will become troublesome if you keep threatening...] (Dolgar)

[Too much of your preaching!] (Vagle)

And then... Vagle used flames to threaten Dolgar and forced him into silence. The conversation just now was the real nature of those guys... it turned out that they were lowlives.

Whether the mana within the magic stone had run out or not, their voices couldn't be heard any longer. Hence, I severed the [String]. When I told Fia about the conversation earlier, she turned her eyes towards the temple with ridiculing feelings.

"When you use the wrong method to raise people, they will turn out to be such fools. Let's be careful when our children are born." (Fia)

The education will be difficult... not too strict and not too spoiled.

In my case, I pampered my disciples, but that was because they would respond to my expectations. And since my disciples were aware that it wasn't good to behave like spoiled children, I thought that it wasn't necessary to frequently scold them.

Of course, there were times of failures, like this time, in the case of Reese.

However, knowing and learning from the results because of the failure, it would be good if they could make use of it next time in order to find the answer, while having less troubles. It was good enough if they could do it.

While looking away from Fia, who was looking at me while expecting something, I cleared my throat to change the mood.

"That will be sooner or later... right? So, shall I rescue Reese? Since they boldly said that Reese wasn't there, there would be no problem if she disappeared." (Sirius)

"It's also not necessary to face them." (Fia)

"Yes. It seems that Emilia and Reus have already returned to the carriage, so Fia will



also return to the carriage.” (Sirius)

I told Emilia and Reus to return to our carriage after telling them about Dolgar and the hostile believers.

Apparently, it looked like they were taking Amanda along, but... there was no problem.

“Understood. Make sure you get Reese back.” (Fia)

“Of course. I’m going.” (Sirius)

Entering the back alley, I took off the cloak and the long coat and handed them over to Fia. After that, I went back to the temple while avoiding public eyes.



If I combined [Air Step] and [String] with my skill, there would be almost no buildings that I couldn’t infiltrate in this world.

However, when I returned to the temple, I quietly waited behind the building.

I already knew the location of Reese, and what happened to Vagle, but... the problem was the Fire Wolf.

It seemed to have high detection capability that was as good as Hokuto’s, so if I infiltrated the temple, there was a high possibility of being detected.

It was a bit hard to have both the Fire Wolf and Vagle as opponents at the same time, and that’s why I decided to have the Fire Wolf leave the temple.

If he understood the matter that I conveyed through [Call], he’s supposed to take action soon...

“...oo... ooo...” (Hokuto)

The moment when Hokuto’s howling barely arrived, the Fire Wolf appeared on the roof of the temple, and jumped out into the town. After that, it used the roof of houses as footholds to move and head outside of the town.

Yes, I asked Hokuto to take the role of luring the Fire Wolf away.

Since the siblings were returning to the carriage, Hokuto's burden to guard Chris and Ashley became lessened.

And I told Hokuto to escape without fighting the Fire Wolf. If I wanted to fight them for real, that would be after I rescued Reese.

"I'll depend on you, Hokuto. Well, let's get going." (Sirius)

Lastly, I told him not to do the impossible, and then I hung the [String] on a roof, and infiltrated the temple.



Since the position of Reese and Vagle hadn't changed from earlier, I immediately roamed inside of the temple without going for the rescue.

Even if there were many guards, since I could check their position through [Search], sometimes I avoid, hide, or let them go over me, and then I was able to find a reference room and storehouse without being found by anyone.

I wasn't going to steal valuables in particular. Instead of that, I was looking for evidence of their wrongdoings.

As I collected the evidence to the extent that it didn't hinder my actions, the reaction of Vagle started moving towards Reese, so I moved on as well.

The place where Reese was captured was the building in the courtyard of the temple. According to believers, it was Vagle's private residence.

When I arrived there, Vagle was in the middle of calling out to the guards in the courtyard. It appeared that he instructed that nobody approaches the courtyard. After confirming that no one was around in the vicinity, Vagle went into the building.

Although I had already entered earlier, there was no problem because I had business with Vagle.

While Reese's voice calling my name could be heard inside my brain and from the building in front of me, as I quietly approached the building and peeked the inside through a window, a scene of Vagle trying to woo Reese entered my eyes.

“That Sirius or something from early was a noisy guy. Unfortunately, that guy has headed home when I said that you were not here, you know?” (Vagle)

“Do you think Sirius-san will obediently return home?” (Reese)

“Hahaha, unfortunately, it’s true. Taking this opportunity, I will bring his dead body tomorrow.” (Vagle)

“...While having such power, why don’t you use it the other way? Spirits are not just tools to head your orders!” (Reese)

“No, aren’t they tools? Since they hear anything if I order them to.” (Vagle)

“They are not tools! Spirits are... friends!” (Reese)

I wasn’t sure if the other side noticed it, but as someone who could see Spirits similar to Reese, Vagle’s action was something that couldn’t be forgiven.

Vagle’s mood was getting worse every time Reese argued, but she faced him without fear.

Although this was not a safe situation, Reese, who was usually kind and barely excessive, was very angry. Without immediately rushing in, I decided to wait to observe the situation while watching her.

“I heard from Dolgar that people will listen when they are threatened. Such conceited preaching when that small fry is losing to me!” (Vagle)

“People can’t live just by threatening others! If you keep doing that, people will naturally avoid you, and nobody will understand you!” (Reese)

“I don’t mind if nobody understands me. When my Flames burn, no matter what kind of person, they all will burn and it will be over. In other words, strong people are always alone!” (Vagle)

“No, you know nothing about the world. There are a lot of people in the world who are stronger than you!” (Reese)

“Keh, you can only say cheeky things, woman. I will immediately ‘train’ you so that you won’t say bothersome things again. First off, would you like to get burned with fire?

Or, maybe I will ‘train’ you by using my body until you can’t move...” (Vagle)

“Let’s make it so that you can’t move, then.” (Sirius)

“Hmm, who’s that... aarghh!?” (Vagle)

I secretly stretched the [String] and coiled it around Vagle’s ankle, and then, I poured mana towards Vagle in a go.

If you let a foreign mana, which wasn’t yours, flow throughout your body, the whole body would be numbed with severe pain as if you got hit with a stun gun. It was one way to forcibly disable an opponent. I named it [Stun] since it was like the magical version of a stun gun. Incidentally, since it would destroy the whole body from the inside if I seriously did it, it was difficult to adjust to the degree of disabling him.

“Aah... gahh...” (Vagle)

“Good, it seems that you have a reliable consciousness, Hey, do you understand my words?” (Sirius)

Somehow, he could only move his neck and eyes, he glared at me, who was approaching him, in disgust. His voice appeared to be communicating well.

“Bastard... you... just now...” (Vagle)

“It is meaningless if you can’t unleash your prideful Flames. How is it? How does it feel when you are being overlooked by someone whom you despise?” (Sirius)

“I... will... kill... you...” (Vagle)

Vagle tried to get up while clenching his teeth, but since his whole body was completely paralyzed, the best he could do was agonize himself.

Maybe this could last for an hour, but there was enough time to tell him about my business.

“I came here because I got something to say to you, other than to rescue Reese. First off...” (Sirius)

When I turned around, there was a figure of Reese standing still while stretching out

her hands. Apparently, she couldn't easily barge in because she was concerned about being a hindrance to us.

Because of that, when I spread both hands and signaled her to come, Reese jumped into my bosom while smiling. As I kept holding her and stroking her head, Reese looked up at me with tears overflowing.

"Sirius-san... thank you. And... I'm sorry." (Reese)

"Aah, it's alright if Reese is safe. It's alright now." (Sirius)

"Yes!" (Reese)

When I smiled back at Reese who, had a natural smile that attracted people, Vagle, who was lying at our feet, groaned with regret.

"Sh—... she... is... mine..." (Vagle)

"Nope, Reese is not yours. She's mine." (Sirius)

I didn't really like the way he treated women, but I had to clearly finish what I wanted to say to him.

And then, Reese, who heard my proclamation, was blushing. She buried her face in my chest in order to hide, and started to writhe. Well... since she was happy, there was no problem.

Whether Reese regained herself after a short while, she separated from me while still blushing, and she moved to my rear. She seemed to think that I was about to do something.

After stroking Reese's head, I looked down on Vagle with cold eyes as if I was looking at an insect.

"Well, do you understand well how narrow your world is?" (Sirius)

"Where... is... that..." (Vagle)

"If it is about the Fire Wolf, it is chasing my partner outside the town. That's because you depend too much on Spirits and those around you." (Sirius)

“I will... you... with... my... Flames...” (Vagle)

“Well, for guys like you, can’t you just admit that you lost, since you are not in a situation where you can use your ability?” (Sirius)

It was easy if I finished Vagle off here, but considering Ashley’s arrangement, which was planned for later, it would be soon anyway.

“There is a vast plain with a rock southeast of Fonia, right? Come with the Fire Wolf only, tomorrow morning. My partner and I will fight you and your partner.” (Sirius)

However, the main reason was... my own selfishness.

I wanted a complete verdict when he could use Spirit Magic. I want him to regret it from the bottom of his heart.

“Since this is not about having a match, but killing each other, I don’t mind if you bring your companion, other than the Fire Wolf. In that situation, you will be degraded into a weakling who will not feel confident about your own ability.” (Sirius)

“...Are... you... kid—... me...?” (Vagle)

“You don’t want people to see your lame appearance, right? Think about it carefully.” (Sirius)

If he was too proud of himself, he would come, even if I didn’t provoke him up to that point, but just in case, I would increase his anger towards me as much as possible.

In the end, I laughed as if looking down on him. And then, picked Reese and left the building.

Once I got out of the building, the sun had already set and the outside was dark. In this darkness, the possibility of being noticed when I flew in the sky would be really low.

I held Reese by carrying her, and invoked [Airstep]. I jumped higher than the temple and escaped.

I succeeded in rescuing Reese and striking a challenge to Vagle.



## Extra

After separating herself from Sirius, who was going to rescue Reese, Fia, who returned slightly earlier to the carriage, was greeted by the siblings.

“Welcome back, Fia-san.” (Emilia)

“Welcome back Fia-ane. Eh...? Where is Aniki?” (Reus)

“He went back to save Reese.” (Fia)

“If that’s so, he will come back soon. Aah, Fia-san. Those are Sirius-sama’s coat and mantle, right? Since it is folded, I will keep it.” (Emilia)

“Really? Alright, please.” (Fia)

Emilia, who received the coat and mantle with a smile on her face, was walking towards the carriage while hugging it with great care. While on her way, it went without saying that Emilia was wagging her tail because she was sniffing the smell on the coat.

Fia, who was looking at Emilia’s back, muttered while remembering the old days.

“If a Silver Wolfkin... gets hooked, will they all be like that?” (Fia)

When Fia was traveling by herself, she had met several Silver Wolfkin adventurers.

Thinking Emilia as her companion, there was not even one who happily wagged their tails, like how Emilia was while being crazy about her Master.

Reus, who was nearby, replied to her muttered thought.

“It’s not that, Fia-ane(1). It’s just Nee-chan, because she belongs to Aniki.” (Reus)

“I see. Well, is Reus different?” (Fia)

“It’s a bit different because Aniki and I have a close relationship like a real brothers. Men are those who are tied with a deep bond! Eventually, I would like to be called his

partner like Hokuto!" (Reus)

[Aniki—!] (Reus) ← while wagging his tail.

[Aniki's cooking is delicious after all!] (Reus) ← while wagging his tail.

[Aniki, I want more!] (Reus) ← his tail was... more or less...

"You're also the same." (Fia)

"What?" (Reus)

She wouldn't want to say that... Sirius probably thought of him as nothing but a pet.



## Presenting Hokuto

Currently, Hokuto-kun, who left the carriage, was on a hill that overlooked the town of Fonia.

After Hokuto-kun received orders from his Master, he chose the right time at his own discretion, and loudly howled.

"Awoooo—!" (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun's mission was... to lure a monster who claimed to be a Fire Wolf in the temple.

Hokuto-kun hadn't encountered it yet, but since he heard that it was similar to himself, he kept waiting while somewhat being cautious.

And... the change soon came.

A thing like a red light was approaching towards him from the town at a tremendous speed.

Judging that wasn't a mistake, Hokuto-kun turned his back without verifying the appearance of the other side, and then, he ran away.



Why didn't Hokuto-kun verify the opponent?

It didn't matter who the other side was.

Just as he was ordered by his Master, Hokuto-kun would lure the Fire Wolf for as long as he can to earn time.

Apparently the one with higher speed was on Hokuto-kun's side.

Because of that, Hokuto-kun kept running while maintaining the speed at a distance where he could see the other's appearance.

Since it would be troublesome if the opponent gave up because he was too far from it, he didn't forget to shorten the distance on purpose once in a while.

The frustrated opponent shot a ball of fire many times, but if it was compared to Master's [Magnum], it was like seeing a fly. Without even turning around, Hokuto-kun repeatedly jumped and easily avoided it.

By handling it in this way, the frustrated opponent continued to chase Hokuto-kun for over an hour.

And then, there was the withdrawal signal coming from his Master through [Call], so Hokuto-kun accelerated all at once to greatly widen the distance from the Fire Wolf.

The Fire Wolf seemed to give up on Hokuto-kun, who ran like the wind. After confirming that his opponent stopped moving, Hokuto-kun also stopped.

[You are a coward! Remember this! I will burn you to the bones when I see you next time!] (Enrou)

Hearing a howl that sounded like a loser, the Fire Wolf went back to the town.

"...Woof!" (Hokuto)

'You don't need to worry, I will fight you next time.'

While Hokuto-kun seemed to say something like that, he returned to the carriage to wait for his Master.

✂Later... he received an excessive brushing.

# Chapter 90

## White and Red

I flew into the sky with [Airstep] and escaped from the temple. And then, I sent a [Call] to Hokuto to signal the mission's completion while looking down at the town.

"Mission accomplished. Outrun that fellow and return. Send me a signal if there is anything." (Sirius)

Since the Fire Wolf, who was chasing after Hokuto, wasn't in a situation which it could borrow the power of the Spirits like in the daytime, he probably could shake it off if he wanted to run away.

Later, when we flew in the sky while thinking about safely returning back to the carriage, Reese, who seemed to be happy and blushing until now, let out a small sigh and started to get depressed.

"...What's wrong Reese?" (Sirius)

"Uhhh, this time... I had given trouble to a lot of people..." (Reese)

"I don't mind it, but please do something with Emilia and Reus. They were really worried when Reese got kidnapped." (Sirius)

"Yeah. If it makes the situation better, I think that I want to make something to treat them. Of course, it is also for Sirius-san and Fia-san." (Reese)

"Aah, I'm looking forward to it." (Sirius)

Since Reese's cooking was almost as skillful as my own, I was looking forward to it without flattering her.

While thinking about asking for something that I wanted to eat, I noticed that Reese was looking at me with a serious expression.

She... probably wanted to tell me something important. After gathering her thoughts

for a little while, she slowly opened her mouth.

“...Sirius-san. I’d been thinking the whole time when I was kidnapped, but... I am still unable to let this go, due to my naïvety.” (Reese)

When she talked about naïvety, since it wasn’t related to Vagle, I guessed it was a matter of saving people.

It was true that I was forced to change the plan, but since it wasn’t a bad thing to help others, I had planned to emphasize that fact. Reese already received her punishment, which was being caught by the enemy.

“If I knew that person was that bad... I might have given up. But if people and friends can be saved when I use my power, I think that I want to help.” (Reese)

“Even if that puts everyone in danger?” (Sirius)

“If everyone is in danger... I may think about it for a bit. However, if I overlook someone who I can save in front of me, I am sure that I will not forgive myself. I feel like... I will lose something important inside of me.” (Reese)

Reese was a gentle woman, and that’s why she was... naïve. Knowing the reality, it was enough to say that she was overly optimistic when she wanted to help, even though she had actually experienced the consequences.

She couldn’t bear to see someone die in front of her, so instead of hurting people, she chose to heal and protect. In reality, the one who proactively learned magic was her.

“So, I think that I would like live like that from now on. Like Nee-sama told me in the past... to become selfish.” (Reese)

But... if that wasn’t Reese, even if it wasn’t spread, there was no way for her to be called ‘Saintess’.

Reese’s naïvety was a disadvantage, and also an advantage. Attracting people without any threat of power, should I say that was her strong point, which could naturally increase the number of allies?

It was a contrary to my principle, which my strong point was about killing.

Besides, if Reese chose this path, I should support her as a Shishou.

“...Is that the path that Reese chosen? If there are two lives, you may be asked for a painful choice to choose either one of them, you know?” (Sirius)

“I don’t want to say that it is a big deal to save everyone, but still I... would like to save both.” (Reese)

“Haha, you are really selfish. If that’s the case, it won’t do you any good if you are not strong.” (Sirius)

“Yes, I will save the person who I want to save, and I want to become stronger... to the extent that I can protect everyone by myself. Like Sirius-san, I would like to push through with my own selfishness.” (Reese)

“Am I being selfish?” (Sirius)

“Aah, uhmm... I am not saying it as a bad thing. Just like Sirius-san, I only thought that I wanted to be able to push on with my own purpose.” (Reese)

Indeed, it wasn’t a mistake to say that I was selfish. Other than hobbies and to live, the reason why I trained myself was because I wanted to be able to eliminate obstacles to myself.

After waiting until the flustered Reese to settle down, I told her my feelings towards her determination.

“Reese... it doesn’t bother me if you do it as much as you like. Therefore, be strong. And, in order to get closer to the ideals etched in your heart, please keep walking forward. That is... my wish as your Shishou.” (Sirius)

“Yes! I will become stronger as Sirius-san’s disciple, and lo—... lover! So... please watch me.” (Reese)

And then, Reese brought her face closer and smiled after kissing my cheek.

“Aah, please show it to me. As long as I am alive, I will watch over you.” (Sirius)

If it was her, who could use Spirit Magic, she would become stronger and grow bigger.

I continued flying in the sky, while thinking that it would be more fun from now on.



...Come to think of it, there was one thing I had forgotten to say.

“Yeah, Reese. Although everyone doesn’t mind, it is a fact that you have caused trouble in various ways. Therefore, Reese is prohibited from having an extra helping for today’s dinner.” (Sirius)

“Eh!?” (Reese)

Although she was already punished for being caught by the enemy, as a standard... it was more or less a punishment of our feelings.

In fact, I thought that they should try to eat their meals, but since it wasn’t good not to take in the nutrition, I refrained from prohibiting an extra helping.

However... Reese’s expression was full of despair.

“I have confirmed this earlier. It seems that Emilia is making stew at about this time. Since you aren’t allowed to have an extra helping, you can only have a cup.” (Sirius)

“Br— bread... how many pieces of bread can I have!?” (Reese)

“Of course, it’s one piece.” (Sirius)

“Dessert...” (Reese)

“Only one pudding.” (Sirius)

“Uhh... then, somehow... You’re right, it’s for reflection. Patience... patience...” (Reese)

I felt that the reflection was deeper than before, but that was probably evidence that she had regained her usual self.

When I thought about it... wasn’t that a good thing?



After that, Reese and I descended to the ground in front of the forest away from the town, and we returned to the carriage.

“Reese!” (Emilia)

“Reese-ane!” (Reus)

The siblings, who noticed us, started to run, and they were clinging onto Reese.

Since Reese’s body was smaller than the siblings’, she was completely buried when they were both hugging her. Reese seemed to be in pain from being sandwiched by the siblings, but I also saw that she was happy.

“I-I’m back. I’m sorry for making you guys get involved and worried because of me.” (Reese)

“That’s not it. It’s not just Reese. Our strength was also insufficient.” (Emilia)

“That’s right, we were also bad for falling behind them! It’s pitiable as Aniki’s disciple!” (Reus)

“...Yes, thanks. Say, together with you guys, I will also... become stronger. I will never lose to such a person, never again... because I will become stronger.” (Reese)

While confirming each other’s safety, Reese declared her determination to the siblings.

The siblings were puzzled by the change for a moment, but they immediately high-fived each other. Those three were really on good terms.

“Reese-san! I’m glad... that you are safe.” (Ashley)

“I’m sorry! You got caught because of me.” (Amanda)

“N-no, we are all safe. More importantly, you were acquainted with Ashley, after all.” (Reese)

“Yes! I was able to meet with Ashley again because Reese-sama saved me. I really appreciate it.” (Amanda)

“S-stop referring to me with -sama! Amanda-san is older and I am just an adventurer!”  
(Reese)

Subsequently, Ashley and Amanda came and thanked her, while repeatedly bowed.

Reese seemed to be embarrassed, but Amanda was safe as a result of Reese’s actions. I thought that it was polite to accept it without hesitation.



After that, we finished our reunion, and when Hokuto safely returned, it became a bit of a late dinner.

When I noticed it, we had already become like a large household. Ashley and her companion were concerned about the food supply left in the carriage, but Emilia didn’t mind giving them dishes with soup.

“I think that we can shop soon in Fonia, so don’t worry about it. Is that right, Sirius-sama?” (Emilia)

“Aah, yes, Emilia is right. Since we will be busy tomorrow, so please eat well and take a rest.” (Sirius)

“Are you busy? Besides, about shopping... will it be alright for Sirius-san and the others to enter the town?” (Ashley)

We already explained the series of actions taken in Fonia to Ashley and the rest.

Since our faces were already known by Mira’s Doctrine, it might be natural for Ashley to worry.

“Not just us, Ashley will also go to Fonia. Have you heard the story of believers who are against Dolga in town?” (Sirius)

“Yes, I think they are fine. Could this be...” (Ashley)

“Yes. After joining with the believers in the town tomorrow, you can go ahead to the temple of Mira’s Doctrine after making preparation for it.” (Sirius)

I gathered the evidence of their wrongdoings when I infiltrated the temple. I also



picked up things that were seized from the population and nobles and arranged them in front of Ashley.

“This is... the stolen heirloom that Megina-san<sup>(1)</sup> lamented over!” (Ashley)

“Look, Ashley. This is a memento of Sage<sup>(2)</sup>-sama’s wife. I had heard that it was gone...” (Amanda)

They were merely memorable things, but Ashley and Amanda confirmed them while being surprised. Since they knew who the owners were, this could be quick.

“Sensei, what is this?” (Chris)

“The things here are important things kept by Dolgar. It seems there are people who reluctantly obeyed Mira’s Doctrine. That’s why I show it to them, so they can become our allies.” (Sirius)

Since Mira’s Doctrine was a matter of Ashley’s in the first place, I wanted her to resolve it herself as much as possible.

If we got involved more than necessary and solved the problem, Chris and Ashley would not learn their lessons. Similar problems would happen later, and they could do nothing without us... and it would become troublesome.

Because of that, when I decided to lend my hands, I arranged the means to gather allies, like now. I found Dolgar’s weaknesses and shared them with Ashley. Besides, I planned to move around those who supported him from behind.

“Cer-certainly, this may work. But, Sensei, isn’t this too sudden?” (Chris)

“I think that it is bad for it being too sudden, but we also have many things to take care and it is impossible to change plans.” (Sirius)

Originally, the plan was to let Ashley gather allies, make use of Dolgar’s weaknesses, and attack after weakening the temple’s side.

However... the disciples had unexpectedly encountered Vagle, and, furthermore, Reese was kidnapped.

Since they were picking a fight with us, I completely stopped using an indirect route

from that moment on. While actively assisting Ashley, I decided to proactively crush Dolgar.

“Besides, Dolgar has the Holy Knight, Vagle. How about scaring him to let him move to Ashley’s ally...?” (Amanda)

“Since he will be leaving the town tomorrow, there is no problem. That’s the reason why the plan needs to speed up.” (Sirius)

I didn’t take care of Vagle when I had the opportunity to because I didn’t want to let the temple... Dolgar, raise an excessive alertness.

Although it was a short observation, I knew Vagle was a man with a huge amount of pride. Such a guy probably would never want to talk about the matter of being defeated, and since he was in a situation which he could only explain to Dolgar, the chances of speaking about it would be low.

If he was in such a situation, Vagle would surely come to get revenge on me, and even if he was getting more annoying, it won’t be out of place if he left the temple in the morning.

It was the usual daily occurrence.

If there was anything, it was because of the Holy Knight’s negligence.

Taking advantage of that opportunity, Ashley and the others would rush in, and suppress Dolgar in one go... well, that was the plan.

I explained the details of the plan to Ashley, and that I invited Vagle and would fight him outside of the town in the morning.

My disciples were motivated when they heard the plan, but on the contrary, Ashley was greatly flustered, so I put up a smile, signaling to them that it would be alright.

“What, I’m good at confining. Rest assured, he will not return to the town until the matter is over.” (Sirius)

“Th-that’s not it! I’m worried about Sirius-san’s safety, if you fight that person! If something happens to Sirius-san, then Reese-san...” (Ashley)

“He is a child who abuses Flames, after all. As far as confining him, it depends on how I do it.” (Sirius)

“But!” (Ashley)

“Calm down, Ashley.” (Chris)

It was almost getting dangerous when Ashley made some noise, but after Chris stepped in to calm her down, he turned a serious look at me.

“Sensei... will you be alright?” (Chris)

“No problem. Rather than Vagle, the Fire Wolf is more problematic, but to me...” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

When I turned my face to the side, Hokuto barked as if saying to entrust it to him, while wagging his tail.

After all, it was troublesome when the monster could avoid my long distance sniping. It seemed that Hokuto felt a similar air to himself from the Fire Wolf, and he was also full of enthusiasm.

“As you can see, I also have a partner. Don’t worry about me anymore than that. You guys just focus on Dolgar and the things that come after. If the present Mira’s Doctrine loses Dolgar, there shouldn’t be any problems, right?” (Sirius)

Dolgar changed Mira’s Doctrine according to his personal interests, and there were many believers who went along with it and became corrupted.

It was almost an impossible task to revert Mira’s Doctrine back by dealing with them or opening their eyes. Since it was a problem of the whole country, it was more problematic to deal with it later, compared to defeating the enemies.

“I will hold Vagle back until you guys regain control. After that, I will overwhelm and defeat him.” (Sirius)

“Eh? Aniki, aren’t we also going to fight Vagle?” (Reus)

“Aah, Hokuto and I are good enough to defeat those guys. I want you guys to move along with Ashley, and help her with various things.” (Sirius)

A little explanation didn't seem to be enough.

Reese understood, since I dealt with him in front of her, but the other disciples turned their eyes towards me with anxious looks.

“But Sirius-sama, the opponent is someone who uses Spirit Magic that had cornered Reese, right? Although I don't think Sirius-sama will be defeated, there is also a possibility of being injured, so to overwhelm him in one go...” (Emilia)

“I am only dealing with a child, but your side will be busier, you know?” (Sirius)

The plan with Ashley and the rest for tomorrow was to join the believers after infiltrating the town. After gathering allies, they would rush into the temple using the things I brought.

There would be many things to do and it was better to have more hands and, more than anything...

“This might be bad for you guys, but I will be his only opponent. Because... he kidnapped Reese.” (Sirius)

I would make him regret living.

Although I told Ashley, who was concerned, about the extent of the confinement, but depending on the situation, I planned to defeat him using a normal method.

“Anyhow, I have decided this plan on my own. Will it be alright with Ashley? If you want to object or change it, please tell me in advance.” (Sirius)

I judged that Ashley wasn't prepared to say anything until now, but I would still want to listen to her opinion, at least once.

To tell the truth, I wasn't interested, but it would be troublesome if they failed on the appointed day.

“No, I have nothing. In the first place, we would be caught if Sirius-san wasn't there, so it will be far better than we who don't know the art of fighting. And, more importantly,

I believe in you, who will do this for us.” (Ashley)

“I also believe in Sensei, I will only fight to protect Ashley!” (Chris)

“I will also believe you.” (Amanda)

“Maybe you... were meant to be a messenger of Mira-sama... I was thinking too much.” (Ashley)

“...It may not be a mistake. It’s probably not weird to call Sirius-sama the messenger of God.” (Emilia)

“Hey, Emilia, how far are you going to lift me up?” (Sirius)

It was somehow a futile belief, but would it be alright if there was no objection?

After that, I informed them of the detailed strategy. And then, we dismissed to prepare for tomorrow.

As everyone passed the time as one preferred, Ashley came in front of me while I was doing preparation for tomorrow, and she deeply lowered her head.

“Thank you so much for taking care of everything. I can’t do anything now, but I certainly would like to thank you.” (Ashley)

“Nothing is over yet. Besides, there is no need to worry about gratitude, or anything. We already have our reasons to fight, as well.” (Sirius)

Since they touched our important person, we were just going to get our revenge.

In the meantime, for Ashley and the others... we were merely giving them assistance to save the Doctrine.

“You don’t have to be concerned about us for now. Think only about doing something to Dolgar. You will protect Mira’s Doctrine and lead it as its Saintess, right?” (Sirius)

“I was driven out of Mira’s Doctrine, but would it still be alright to call me its Saintess?” (Ashley)

“It is the people around you who decide that. If they call you differently, you can move

as a believer, you know?” (Sirius)

“...If Sirius-san is involved, even the Saintess will lose face, huh?” (Ashley)

“The most important thing is the person herself, rather than the title. Besides, as I said yesterday, there are companions who stay around you not because you are a Saintess. Go have a proper discussion with each other about the preparations for tomorrow.” (Sirius)

When Ashley turned around, Chris vigorously nodded as if to entrust the matter to him, while Amanda stood up with a gentle smile.

Finally, Ashley deeply lowered her head again to me, and she ran up to her trustworthy friends.

“Sirius-sama, good work.” (Emilia)

As the preparations were completed, while drinking tea that Emilia brewed, it was time to rest and alternated the lookout shifts.



The next day, Hokuto and I came to the place of the duel I informed Vagle about.

Since the opponent was an opponent who controlled flames, I didn’t take off my usual long coat, and wore a custom-made cloak that was prepared yesterday.

Here was a high ground with an extreme difference in altitude. There were various large and small rocks, and it was also a barren land that plants didn’t grow on.

Since it was an hour away from the town, Fonia, it would be difficult to notice if there was something happening in the temple. Even if he confirmed it, he would not be able to return so soon.

In such a place, I sat on a rock of a reasonable size. I kept waiting for Vagle to come, while stroking Hokuto, who was in front of me.

“...He is a slow walker, huh?” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

We figured the other party was approaching due to my [Search] and Hokuto's senses, but, at any rate, they were walking really slow.

It seemed that it would take some time, so I decided to brush Hokuto, after taking out a portable comb.

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

"After all, you are my favorite. And it hasn't changed since long ago..." (Sirius)

While continuing to brush Hokuto, the time when I noticed that my disciples started to move to the town... heat waves suddenly occurred and stroked my cheek.

"Dieee—!" (Vagle)

When I looked up, a huge fireball was heading our way.

It had enough power to melt even the rock I was sitting on, and it was enough to make a big hole in the ground. If it made a direct hit, not only me, but even Hokuto would be in danger.

"...What a sudden greeting." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

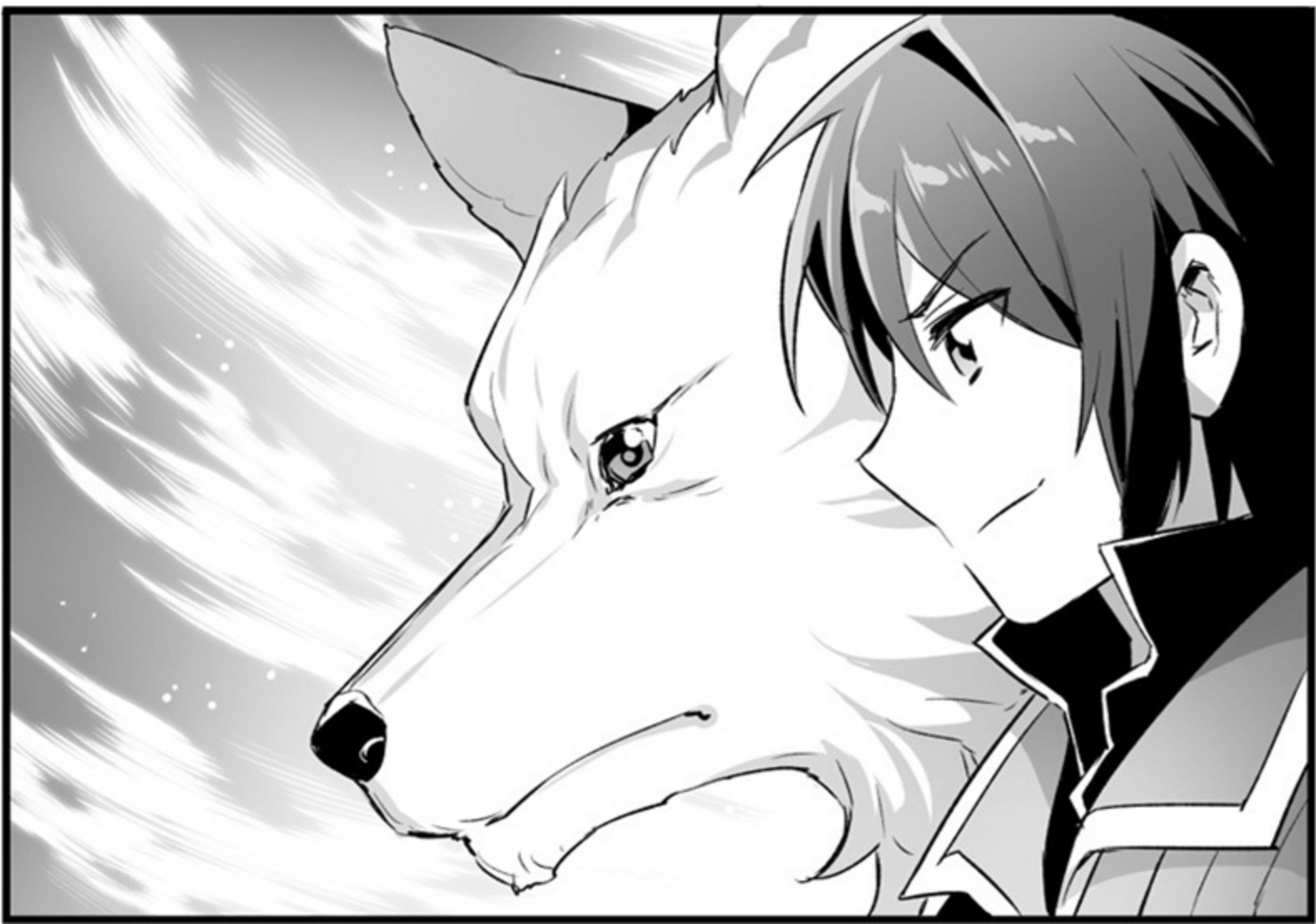
Perhaps that blow was aimed as a surprise attack, but it was almost meaningless to me, since I could use [Search]. They were approaching while hiding between the rocks, so I knew that they were about to do something.

Because of that, I got on Hokuto's back before the fireball fell, and moved away. Plus, I was deliberately observing the might of the fireball.

"Cheh, damn it!" (Vagle)

[Like I've said, it is impossible. I am not sure about that man, but the one over there is an existence that resembles me, you know?] (Enrou)

When I turned towards the voices I heard, Vagle and the Fire Wolf appeared from the hill.





Whether the Fire Spirits were already lending their power, the flames spewed from the body of the Fire Wolf were intense. When I saw it for the first time, its body was a bit smaller than Hokuto's, but it was now the same size as Hokuto.

Hokuto was alarmed and starting to growl. And then, I turned my eyes to Vagle, who seemed to be annoyed.

"Could that be revenge for yesterday's surprise attack? If so, it doesn't suit you, so you better stop it. It was bad and pointless." (Sirius)

"Shut up! I don't feel comfortable teaching you lesson when you won due to surprise attack!" (Vagle)

"You are weak because you are full of openings. Or would it better for you if you were killed yesterday?" (Sirius)

"Stop joking around!" (Vagle)

Vagle was angry with my frivolous talk. He produced countless fireballs and threw them, so I plunged into the shadows of the rocks and let them fly over me.

It seemed that he couldn't break the rocks with fireballs unleashed in quantity, rather than quality. Since they were being shot off endlessly, I couldn't considerably rush out. When I was about to aim for them with the bullets of [Magnum]... a shadow spread to my feet.

When I reflexively looked up, the Fire Wolf fell from the sky, while brandishing its claws.

[Hahaha! You're full of gaps!] (Enrou)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Hokuto jumped out and swung his claws. He intercepted the Fire Wolf's claws, and they repelled each other upon impact. After that, Hokuto and the Fire Wolf landed in separate locations.

The arm of the Fire Wolf who received Hokuto's claws was torn, but flames immediately spewed out and it was regenerated.

On the other hand, although Hokuto didn't seem to be hurt, the fur on the right forefoot, which he swung his nails, was burned a bit and it turned dark. Apparently, it was burnt in the aftermath of the flames spewing from the whole body of the Fire Wolf.

Hokuto's fur was also quite strong against flames, but... it proved that the flames of the Fire Wolf were intense.

[Hehehe... I can do it. As expected of Hundred Wolves, huh?] (Enrou)

"Gurururu..." (Hokuto)

It could cause damage just by touching it. In addition, not only was the intensity amplified by the Fire Spirits, the Fire Wolf that could also regenerate its body was really troublesome.

It would not be compatible with Hokuto, who only fought with his body and couldn't use weapons.

However...

"...You can do it, right?" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"...Understood. Hokuto, please play with the Fire Wolf over there." (Sirius)

I instructed him to fight the Fire Wolf.

We also had our ways to fight together, but since we couldn't defend with Water like Reese, and it would be a hassle if we were exposed with wide range attacks at the same time from both of them. Since they were using a mutual flame, there was a little possibility of friendly fire. Hence, the strategy was to fight in separate locations.

Above all... Hokuto said he wanted to do it by himself. And I respected that intention.

[Hou... Do you think that you, alone, can defeat me?] (Enrou)

"...Woof!" (Hokuto)

Hokuto greatly leaped and landed on a higher ground. He barked while looking down

at the Fire Wolf.

He probably wanted to provoke it. The Fire Wolf, who received the provocation, happily smiled while stimulating the flames on its whole body.

[Alright, I will accept that boring provocation. Oi, I will fight against him!] (Enrou)

“Do whatever you want! My aim is only that man!” (Vagle)

[Humph, don’t be careless. You were done in yesterday, remember?] (Enrou)

“I can win with my Flames if it is a frontal confrontation!” (Vagle)

[You haven’t changed. I won’t care if anything happens, alright?] (Enrou)

The Fire Wolf also leaped towards the hill, thus Hokuto started to run away from us.

When I looked at the back of the moving Hokuto and the Fire Wolf, Vagle also stopped attacking as he judged that it was pointless to attack with small fireballs.

“Don’t hide and come out! What happened to that arrogant attitude when you hit me from behind?” (Vagle)

“Alright, alright. Is this fine?” (Sirius)

When I showed up from a rock with a burning smell, my line-of-sight locked with Vagle, whom I was looking down on from a hill.

He seemed to have used a considerable amount of Flames, but I couldn’t see him getting tired. Maybe there were a lot of Fire Spirits around here, and they probably assisted him a lot.

In reality, when Reese was around a lake where there seemed to be Water Spirits, no matter how many spells she casts, she would also look fine.

They had tremendous power. In this case, the Spirit Magic of a person changes depending on the number of Spirits and the topography.

“It’s not easy to kill you, huh? I will roast everything you are with Flames and I will kill you after making you suffer heavy damage.” (Vagle)

“You can unleash the Flames, but don’t lose your temper, brat.” (Sirius)

I repeated the provocation.

A guy who had an absolute confidence in himself, like Vagle, would be full of openings when he became angry.

Other than that, it was to make him go all out. I decided to defeat him when he was serious, because he was the kind of guy that won’t accept it, unless I crushed his confidence into small pieces.

And then, Vagle, who was angry with the provocation, took a deep breath and shouted.

“You guys, stop his movement!” (Vagle)

At that moment, flames spewed from the surrounding ground, but the flames from a certain distance wasn’t approaching and just swirled around me.

“And... it will be over for this guy!” (Vagle)

Vagle, then, brought forth a bigger fireball than the swirling flames, and he was about to swing it.

The flames around me were meant to block my sight and movement. Was he fond of fireballs?

“You’re thinking with anger. Was it... because you were raised by someone who manipulates Mira’s Doctrine?” (Sirius)

“Hahaha! I will forgive you, if you cry and apologize!” (Vagle)

Based on his personality, I felt like he wouldn’t forgive me, even if I cried and apologized.

I had no plans to apologize in the first place, so I flipped around the mantle while inviting him to quickly come with my hand.

“Heh! What nerve. Run if you can!” (Vagle)

Vagle, then, swung his hand down, and a huge fireball was approaching me.



— Hokuto —

Hokuto braced himself as he kept on running.

He made an assumption from the time he clashed with the Fire Wolf in order to help Master earlier, but it was obviously much stronger than yesterday.

In fact, the Fire Wolf was running with even more power than yesterday, and it continued to close in on Hokuto, which was probably good evidence of that.

[Where do you plan to run away!?] (Enrou)

Hokuto leaped to avoid a fireball, which was released by the Fire Wolf from behind. Since he considered that he was already far away from his Master, he turned around as he landed on the ground.

The Fire Wolf also stopped because of that conduct, and the two animals took a distance and confronted each other.

[Did you finally get motivated? I certainly didn't expect to meet Hundred Wolves together with a human in a place like this.] (Enrou)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Hmm... you are Hokuto? Besides, you... can you not speak?] (Enrou)

Hokuto gave his name as a courtesy and asked the name of the opponent, but the Fire Wolf opened its mouth wide and was laughing.

[Hahaha! What a boner! You are a proud race and yet you're given a name by a vulgar human? And, from the appearance that's unable to speak... are you still a child?] (Enrou)

"Woof, woof!" (Hokuto)

'Don't make a fool of the name give by my Master'... as if Hokuto was saying that, he was angry. The Fire Wolf laughed a while, and then looked at him with great interest.

“When I look at you, you are smaller than the Hundred Wolves that I’ve met a long time ago, but I couldn’t feel a significant difference in strength. It seems that you’ll be an opponent that can make me go all out.” (Enrou)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“What a noisy fellow to give me his name. I am not falling low enough to get a name from a human like you. I am Enrou... that’s all.” (Enrou)

“Woof... Woof!” (Hokuto)

It seemed to be making fun of himself, so why would it work under that human?

When Hokuto asked that, the Fire Wolf loudly howled while activating its own flames.

[Hmph, I don’t remember working under him. He is indeed stupid, but the only interesting part is the Spirits.] (Enrou)

The Fire Wolf was a wolf-kind monster that manipulated flames, but it wasn’t possible to borrow the power of Fire Spirits.

Based on the present power, Vagle seemed to lend him strength, and he could display it because he ordered the Fire Spirits.

[I am using that fool to become stronger. If the Fire Spirits lend their power, this is going to be easy!] (Enrou)

When the cladded flames on the Fire Wolf noticeably swelled, numerous fireballs materialized in the air and poured down on Hokuto all at once.

It had a might that could be called a rain of fire, but it wasn’t overwhelmingly fast for Hokuto, who was familiar with his Master’s gun spells.

Hokuto, who used to his own large build body, avoided the approaching fireballs with small steps, or hit them with his tail and punches, and he kept avoiding with minimal movement.

And then, he swung his tail at a rock nearby at the same time with the gap of the barrage. The rock was crushed by the impact and it became a counterattack with small flying rocks, but the Fire Wolf knocked all of them down with the flames it released

from its mouth.

However, there was one big rock that penetrated the flames. It struck the Fire Wolf and made a hole on its legs; but, again, the flames spewed out and closed the hole.

[That degree of stones are useless! As long as the Spirits lend their power, my body is indestructible!] (Enrou)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

If he didn’t try it, he wouldn’t know. Hokuto smashed a rock again with his tail and the rock became smaller, and he, at the same time...

[You can only the same thing, huh!? As expected of a child... muuh!?] (Enrou)

The Fire Wolf unleashed flames to burn Hokuto and the small rocks at the same time, but Hokuto jumped to the side before the flames hit him. He kicked the ground hard and moved around towards the side of the Fire Wolf. The movement, which was closely perpendicular, was a movement that could be done due to the unique physical ability of Hundred Wolves.

Hokuto, who was on its side, leaped without stopping, and cut the Fire Wolf’s neck with his claws.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto’s fur was burned again and became dark because of the flames cladding the Fire Wolf, but his attack wasn’t over yet.

When you thought that he would cut through with claws and ran through it, he greatly rotated with his forefoot as an axis, and he, then, further swept it with his mana-enforced tail.

Hokuto took a distance once, after dividing its body into several parts, but the flames still spewed out from its body, and the Fire Wolf regenerated as if nothing had happened.

[Although you are a child, is it possible to attack without fear of my flames because you are a Hundred Wolves? But, I’m not impressed with the repeating pointless attacks.] (Enrou)

“...Woof!” (Hokuto)

[...Hou, did you notice?] (Enrou)

Last night, Hokuto shared his information about the Fire Wolf with his Master.

Since the body of the Fire Wolf was formed from flames, you would make holes on its body, but no matter how many times you cut it, it was possible to be regenerated when the flames were activated from the mana of the Fire Wolf. Hence, that was the mechanism.

In other words, if the Fire Wolf continued to use its mana until it ran out, it was possible to defeat him when the flames didn't come out anymore, but... the present Fire Wolf was in a state which the Fire Spirits lent their power according to Vagle's instructions.

Since the Fire Spirits burn the body of the Fire Wolf, it could regenerate without using mana. It wasn't possible to exhaust the Spirits, so roughly speaking, it could endlessly generate itself.

However... as a living thing, it had a weakness.

Just like how his Master could use an unique investigation spell called [Search], it was also obvious for Hokuto, who had sharp mana sensitivity.

[Yes. It is a correct decision to target my core. But... do you know where it is?] (Enrou)

“...” (Hokuto)

[Where do you think my core is? Head? Heart? No, I'm not even sure if it is at a fixed position or not.] (Enrou)

However, even though he knew that there was a lump of mana that seemed to be the core within the body of the Fire Wolf, he also knew that it was freely moving within the body.

Although the preceding continuous attacks were aimed at the core, the Fire Wolf's intuition was sharp. The core moved around and avoided the attacks by a paper-thin difference.



If it was his Master, he would continuously shoot [Magnum] from all directions. He would pursue the core and surely shoot through it.

[From the point of using smaller stones, do you think that you have sufficient projectile weapons? It seems the only thing that you are better at than me is your physical ability.] (Enrou)

“Gurururu...” (Hokuto)

[Let me see... should I raise the difficulty a little bit? Whether you can endure with your body, or you can attack my core... I wonder which one is stronger?] (Enrou)

When a huge flame spurt out from the body of the Fire Wolf, who received additional power from the Fire Spirits, its body was noticeably getting bigger.

Previously, the size of the Flame Wolf was similar to Hokuto, but now it was at least twice the size of him.

The burning sensation could be felt even from far away, and his body would probably be burnt if he got closer.

Furthermore, the difference in physical abilities grew more than double. If he was an ordinary creature, it wouldn't feel weird to be hesitant, but...

“...Woof!” (Hokuto)

[Hou... Are you not afraid? If that's the case, come at me!] (Enrou)

Hokuto was more terrified in his past life, but... he continued fighting against Master's Shishou.

If he compared the fear when he fought against Shishou, he didn't consider the Fire Wolf before him to be a significant opponent.

And he had been fighting against bigger opponents than him for many times.

Hokuto stepped forward without fear, and he swung his nails at the Fire Wolf.

Avoiding the innumerable fluttering flames, he sliced the Fire Wolf's leg, even though his body was burnt, but... it regenerated.

He ran while avoiding pillars of flames spouting from his feet. He, then, sliced the body of the Fire Wolf while swinging his tail, but... it regenerated.

[What's wrong? Your movement is getting slightly dull!] (Enrou)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

His body was burned and even though the black pattern increased on his beautiful white fur... he still wouldn't give up.

Hokuto's Master believed that he would win, and that's why he was sent out.

Hokuto didn't want to betray the trust of his Master, which was more important than anything else. If he wanted to walk by his Master's side, he didn't feel like losing, even if he had a bad compatibility with the opponent.

Hokuto never stopped trying to get stronger. He realized that there were many opponents stronger than himself.

[There! How about avoiding this?] (Enrou)

Since it brought forth a wide range of fire walls, Hokuto jumped high and avoided them.

Hokuto, who jumped high in the air, was aimed at by a fireball, but he swung his nail in midair and cut the fireball. While his forefoot was still burning, he landed on the ground.

[What a futile struggle! As expected, it seems that you have good defensive capabilities.] (Enrou)

“Gurururu...” (Hokuto)

[Did I guess it right? I am concerned about the opponent of that man, so let's have this decided soon.] (Enrou)

The Fire Wolf confirmed that Hokuto wasn't good at dealing with wide range assaults, so it accepted more power from the Fire Spirits, and made his body even bigger.

The body of the Fire Wolf, which was already a towering size, didn't form the shape of

a wolf. It looked like nothing but a huge flame wall.

[Neither your claws nor tail have any meaning with this size! Become wrapped with my flames... and burn!] (Enrou)

In order to swallow Hokuto, the Fire Wolf was completely like a fire tsunami as it burned the ground.

And then, Hokuto...

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

He was waiting for it, and he... howled.

At that moment, Hokuto kicked the ground with his full power and greatly retreated as he started to increase his mana.

Although Hokuto was separated from the Fire Wolf, it continued to press in with a wall of fire without getting flustered.

[It is useless to try and run away! My flames will follow you anywhere!] (Enrou)

Hokuto retreated not because he wanted to run away.

He retreated because he wanted to hit the opponent without leaving any openings.

“Awooooo—!” (Hokuto)

A howl that tremble the earth was released from Hokuto’s mouth, and it contained a huge amount of mana.

In brief, he unleashed nothing but mana while howling.

However... the enormous mana unleashed from the mouth of Hokuto was violently bent by the howl. The mana became a huge whirlpool, gouged the ground, breaking rocks into pieces and it cleansed everything.

Towards the vortex of destruction that covered every space in front of Hokuto, the Fire Wolf couldn’t avoid it and he had no choice but to defend.

If the Fire Wolf was in the state of a wolf, it could gather the flames around the core to defend, and it might have endured Hokuto's assault.

But now, the Fire Wolf expanded its body into a wall in order to swallow Hokuto with its body. It couldn't immediately gather its flames around the core, and it was exposed to the vortex of destruction without being able to completely defend against it.

[Aah... Gaaahhh—!?] (Enrou)

The swell of intense mana continued to shake the whole body and shredded it. The Fire Wolf couldn't maintain the flames on its body and it got smaller as the flames were scraped off.

However, since it was still because of mana, it scattered to about several hundred meters. When the mana vortex disappeared without a trace, the terrain that was damaged by the mana vortex had completely changed.

The trees that had wonderfully grown up, the soaring high rocks, all of it disappeared without a trace. There was nothing in front of Hokuto, other than mountains of rubble.

In the path of destruction where nothing could survive due to that mana vortex, it was small, but something was moving.

[That... can't... be...] (Enrou)

It was the Fire Wolf, whose size had decreased to the size of a person's palm.

The Fire Wolf barely survived, but it had no power to maintain the shape of a wolf any longer. It was only a small mass of fire.

As the Fire Wolf was certainly under a precarious state, Hokuto slowly appeared.

It would be difficult to find a candle-like fire amongst large rubble, but it wasn't impossible for Hokuto.

[I... lost...] (Enrou)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

[Even though you are a child, you are still a Hundred Wolves, huh...?] (Enrou)

It was the complete negligence for the Fire Wolf, since it thought that Hokuto had no projectile or wide range attacks.

Originally, the Fire Wolf could have been generated when the Fire Spirits lent their power, but the Spirits were blown off by Hokuto's mana vortex, so the surroundings became a blank area with no Spirits.

The Spirits would come back after a while, but Hokuto would not wait.

Hokuto quickly raised his forefoot.

[While having such power... you don't have to be together with that fool.] (Enrou)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

[Even if you like him... that fool... will be afraid of your power. That's right... what awaits you... is the despair of being betrayed by those whom you believed in...]  
(Enrou)

"...Woof!" (Hokuto)

'That was a story that would never happened.'

Hokuto answered that with confidence.

'Because, I will never win against my Master... ever.'

[Wha!? You lost to that fool? For such thing to happen...] (Enrou)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

'And don't lump my Master together with that foolish person!'

Hokuto swung his forefoot down while howling...

"Awoooo——!" (Hokuto)

It was a howl of victory.



By the way, Hokuto was in fact at a child's age among Hundred Wolves.

But the inside was a matured dog... In other words, he was given medication by some black organization. It was something like a former high school student detective.<sup>(3)</sup>

...Is that wrong? (Author)



## Extra

That day, Reese was forbidden from having extra helpings, and she refrained herself from dinner as promised.

By the way, whether she was having a bad day, she missed having chosen the biggest bread and biggest platter.

"...Thanks for the meal." (Reese)

"Wh-what's wrong, Reese!? It's just one portion!?" (Emilia)

"If it is Reese-ane, you can afford five portions, right!?" (Reus)

"Uh-uhmm... the thing is..." (Reese)

As Reese explained, the siblings nodded their heads, and Fia tilted her head, while having bread in her mouth.

"...I thought that you guys eat well as children, so what's the fuss?" (Fia)

"Of course, Fia-ane! Meals are very important to Reese-ane!" (Reus)

"It is Sirius-sama's whip of love, isn't it? If Reese has to go through all that... I will refrain myself from having extra helpings." (Emilia)

"Me, too!" (Reus)

"Uhmm... I'm happy with your feelings. Both of you, please eat well... alright?" (Reese)

“It is collective responsibility, you know?” (Emilia)

“Yeah, yeah!” (Reus)

“Well, me too, I wonder. Even so, I’m good enough with a portion, though.” (Fia)

And after dinner...

“Haa...” (Emilia)

“...I’m hungry.” (Reus)

“...Auuu... it seems to not be enough...” (Reese)

Until the time they went to sleep, the sound of their bellies reverberated.

By the way, for the leftover dinner, they decided to eat it the next morning.

Since there was a surplus and newly-made meals this morning, I checked the schedule for today again while arranging the pots.

“Good morning, everyone. Without delaying any further, today’s...” (Sirius)

“Another, please.” (Reese)

“Me too, Aniki!” (Reus)

“Sirius-sama, I want more, please!” (Reese)

“...First of all, as I planned, Vagle...” (Sirius)

“Another, please.” (Reese)

“Me too, Aniki!” (Reus)

“...Ashley will contact the believers of the temple...” (Sirius)

“Another, please.” (Reese)

“You guys! Especially Reese, eat more slowly!” (Sirius)

“...I want more.” (Reese)

Eventually, Reese didn’t stop until the pot was emptied.



# Chapter 91

## The End of Those who Couldn't Change

I was surrounded by flames spewing from the ground, and a big fireball unleashed by the laughing Vagle was drawing closer.

That fireball... was similar to the one unleashed during the surprise attack earlier. I would definitely die if I got directly hit by it.

However, from his personality and grudge against me, would he really want to end this in one blow?

When I closely looked, I couldn't break through the surrounding flames, maybe...

"Do you just want to grill me? You still have a bad personality, huh?" (Sirius)

The running flames on the surroundings and a huge fireball over the sky... it was obvious, no matter which way I chose in this inescapable situation.

In other words, he wanted me to suffer by going through the surrounding flames, and get moderately roasted.

"Do you think that I will meet your expectations?" (Sirius)

I broke through the surrounding flames while muttering that, and, at the same time, the falling fireball directly hit the ground and made a big hole.

As I looked at the scene from a distant location after breaking through the flames, Vagle sullenly glared at me.

"...You, how did you do that?" (Vagle)

"What's the problem?" (Sirius)

"Are you kidding me? How are you... still safe after breaking through that?" (Vagle)

The flames that surrounded me were strong, and it would not be weird to get burned, no matter how fast I went through.

But far from me getting burned, there wasn't even soot on the mantle I put on.

"I am not so gentle to answer when you asked for it." (Sirius)

"Cheh, for you to easily get into the temple, who are you, really!?" (Vagle)

"Figure it out yourself, if you want to know." (Sirius)

"That calmness... is irritating!" (Vagle)

This time, the flames with better firepower spread around. It certainly had the power to burn, if I forcibly broke through.

And when I thought whether the fire was violently going into the sky, the angle changed in the air, and it descended upon me.

From the point of freely manipulating flames that much, it was probably evidence that he was quite familiar with them. But, if it was Reese or Fia, they would add another variation. I guessed that he was still immature.

Anyway, since it contained nothing but power, I broke through the wall of flames again and moved away from the location. Same as before, the mantle and I remained intact.

"What is this!? There is no way to perfectly defend against my Flames!" (Vagle)

"I know that my opponent is using Flames, so do you think that I will not be taking measures against fire?" (Sirius)

"If that's the case, I'm going to directly hit you!" (Vagle)

When Vagle grandly raised his hand, there were about fifty fireballs created in midair, and they were unleashed at the same time.

It seemed that the power was increased as well. Even if I hid behind the rock this time, since there was no way to defend against that...

"...Have you practiced that a long time ago?" (Sirius)

I decided to get through from the front.

The opponent was on a higher elevation, and the distance was about several meters.

I activated [Boost] and ran towards the countless incoming fireballs.

“Heh! To expressly come here... Wha!?” (Vagle)

This was easy if I compared it to when I ran through a bullet storm in a battlefield.

If it was me who was magically strengthened, I had no problem with fireballs, which were slower than the bullets of a gun, unleashed like rain.

Crossing the trajectory of the fireballs, I gradually moved forward while avoiding them by twisting my body and feet. There were some fireballs that couldn't be avoided midway, so I unleashed [Impact] to intercept them.

“...Bastard!” (Vagle)

After breaking through the rain of fireballs, large flames spewed from the ground ahead of me. It became a wall of fire and stood in my way.

However, I kept running without slowing down. While turning the mantle forward just before hitting the flames, I poured mana into it.

“Unleash!” (Sirius)

The mana poured into the numerous magic formations of [Impact] drawn on the surface of the mantle were all unleashed at once. They shot a shock wave around me, and blew the wall of flames away.

Even if it got blow away, new flames spewed out, but I got through it earlier, and succeeded in breaking through the wall.

“W-what!?” (Vagle)

“This time seems to be expected, after all.” (Sirius)

I could break through the wall of flames intact because of this mantle I made.

The mantle used by the cake addict who lived in Elysion created Wind around the surroundings when mana was poured into it, and even my [Magnum] had the ability to divert the trajectory.

This was a thing which replaced the Wind with [Impact].

It was a mantle made by imagining a thing that counteracted the opponent's attack with a shock like an explosive reactive armor. The mana consumption was intense, but because no one could use it other than me, it was being put on hold.

However, since it could blow off a the medium sized flame like now, I thought it would be useful against an opponent like Vagle, and that's why I had it equipped.

"As you can see, small flames will not have any effect on me. That's why, you will not win, unless you work harder, you know? Or... is that the extent of your ability?" (Sirius)

At first, it was to get revenge because Reese was kidnapped, but in the future, there would probably be a time when I had to fight another person who used Spirit Magic, or if Reese or Fia recklessly used Spirit Magic.

That was why, in order to get used to opponents who could use Spirit Magic even if it was just a bit, I deliberately wanted to fight against Vagle with his full power.

To put it in a bad way, Vagle was like a practice platform.

Due to my provocation, Vagle glared at me while clenching his teeth. He, then, opened both hands wide.

"Yeah, got it. I bet you will quickly be sorry or want to make me stop the whole thing. Just as you wish, with all of my power... I will kill you!" (Vagle)

This time, he produced nearly two hundred fireballs, but what I did still didn't change.

Overlooking the trajectory with [Multi-Task], I avoided them with minimal movement, and blew off the fireballs which couldn't avoided with [Impact].

In addition to creating numerous fireballs at the same time, they came from all directions to block my escape route, but I collectively blew them away by using the ability of the mantle.

It was a big mistake if he thought that he could win just by increasing the number. I judged that he should increase the variation of assaults, but I guessed that he probably defeated enemies without using any other kind of assaults.

“What’s really happening!? Why won’t you get hit!?” (Vagle)

I kept running through until I was beneath the higher ground... and the place where I jumped became a blind spot of Vagle’s view, the fireballs started to aim for irrelevant places.

If it was Reese or Fia, they would aim where the Spirits perceived me, but it seemed that guy was depending too much on his visual information. He probably didn’t want to depend on the Spirits because his pride was high.

Before long, Vagle considered that it was meaningless before long, so he interrupted the assault, and created a fireball which was noticeably full of mana.

“Come on! Hit him!” (Vagle)

Aiming at the moment when I jumped out from beneath the higher ground, I wondered if that was his plan to hit me.

Vagle was wary of the surroundings, while maintaining the fireball, and then, I ascended into the front of Vagle, while kicking the walls of the hill as he wanted.

“I guess you can’t defend against this!” (Vagle)

“It’s certainly true that I will not be able to defend against it, but...” (Sirius)

Jumping out from beneath the cliff, the fireball was unleashed towards me, who had openings in midair, but I avoided it by flying sideways with [Air Step].

While Vagle was surprised when I kicked in midair, I made another scaffolding, and I was approaching Vagle using a triangular jump...

“That will be the story if I get hit. [Impact].” (Sirius)

“Gaahhh!?” (Vagle)

I brought my hand to Vagle’s stomach, and blew him away with [Impact] released from

point-blank range.

Since I would break his belly if I did it seriously, I held back to the extent of being stronger than a fist, at best.

He was thrown down from the high ground. Although he fell from the higher place to the ground, he didn't take any defensive posture while writhing in pain.

"A...This guy can't be helped, huh?" (Sirius)

He relied too much on Spirit Magic. Let alone being unfamiliar with pain, he didn't seem to train his body.

I hurled [String] and wrapped it around Vagle, and that lessened the impact to the ground by half.

There was still a considerable shock, but since he was rolling on the ground, it should be alright, since he was still energetic.

And then, I got off the higher ground and walked to the front of Vagle, who was crouching while vomiting.

"How about that? There are many things that can't be seen simply by looking down from a higher place. That's a bit of reality—..." (Sirius)

"Hah... guhhh... Shut... up!" (Vagle)

Vagle, who had a distorted face due to the pain, arranged his breathing and unleashed a fireball. However, the fireball that lacked focus was weak. I easily slashed and threw it away with the sword that I pulled out.

And then, he directed his eyes at me, while I put the sword that still had flames stuck on it into its sheath.

"Damn it... What's going on...? you..." (Vagle)

"This happened because you didn't learn how big this world is, and also because you, alone, believed you were strong in this world. It is time to receive your punishment."  
(Sirius)

“Don’t look down on me!” (Vagle)

“You are unsightly cowering on the ground. So, what’s wrong with looking down on you?” (Sirius)

“I haven’t lost yet!” (Vagle)

When Vagle, who took a deep breath while bearing the pain, pulled his arm, flames spewed from my feet, so I avoided them by leaping backwards.

The time when I realized that it was an attack to make me take some distance, a huge amount of mana had already been unleashed by Vagle, and then, I had an unpleasant hunch running through my whole body.

“Rage all you want! Oh flame, burn everything!” (Vagle)

Widespread attacks of flames that had driven the disciples back were unleashed where every part, except for Vagle, was wrapped in flames.

My mantle could only blow flames away, but the range wouldn’t reach up to there. It wasn’t very useful in a situation which you couldn’t escape outside of the flames range by a step.

If Reese was there, she could have protected me by wrapping my body with water, but since I emphasized more on avoidance against attacks, I didn’t have many protective measures against direct attacks.

However, that would be the story if I only relied on my ability.

“If I have seen a spell once, it is possible to deal with it as much as I want.” (Sirius)

Since I was activating a magic stone drawn with [Create]’s magic formation on the ground before Vagle gave off the mana, the soil covered me while changing into a dome shape, and it became a defensive wall against flames.

“What a wasteful struggle!” (Vagle)

However, when Vagle saw me confine myself behind the earth walls, he shouted, while being irritated, and the fireballs were hurled towards the earth walls.

By spending a rare magic stone, I could only make some earth walls, but they were sturdy ones. However, they weren't reliable against Vagle's assault. In reality, there were some parts already crumbling because of the fireballs.

After that, the flames that were burning the area gradually disappeared and things started to calm down, but it was still too early to jump out. I was considering to hold up just a little more, but Vagle didn't loosen the pursuit.

"If you come out... I will burn you to death!" (Vagle)

Vagle unleashed a huge fireball for the third time today. As it struck the earth walls, it generated a huge fire pillar.

It was impossible for the earth walls, which had already weakened, to endure against that might. They were wrapped in flames and when the flames were exhausted, a big hole opened up on the ground.

"Haa... haa... Serves you right." (Vagle)

In addition to the previous damage, Vagle, who had been continuously using Spirit Magic at full power, was starting to look tired, as expected.

And then, when the flames in the area were extinguished, Vagle raised his face and had a big laugh after confirming that the earth walls had disappeared without a trace due to the fireball and left a huge vacant hole.

"Ha...hahaha! Yeah! As expected! I am stronger! With my flames, everything—..." (Vagle)

"There is an opening." (Sirius)

I stretched [String] from the rear, wrapped it around Vagle's leg, and I tried to pour mana in just like yesterday.

"!? Burn it!" (Vagle)

However, Vagle cleared his feet with his flames and cut my [String].

I judged that reflex was considerable, but...



“Do you think I will fall for this twice!?” (Vagle)

“That’s why you are being too careless.” (Sirius)

“Wha...?” (Vagle)

I severed the [String], and... I cut the left hand of Vagle, who was getting relieved, with a knife.

Vagle was watching the unbelievable appearance of his left hand dancing in the air, but I grab his collar as I continued with my assault, and threw him on the ground from his back.

As blood sprinkled from his left wrist, I looked down on Vagle, who was writhing in pain while rolling on the ground.

“That’s what happens when you think that you can finish everything in one go. You should learn about fighting a little bit more.” (Sirius)

“Aa... aarrghhh!? My... my hand! Wh-why!? Why... you!” (Vagle)

“I knew that this would happen, and there was no reason to forever seclude myself, right?” (Sirius)

In the first place, if I remained inside the earth walls, I would be steam-baked by the surrounding flames.

I made a deep hole at the same time as the earth walls. And then, I made a tunnel from there and moved outside of the flames range. It was the same method I used against the cake addict.

Vaggle was convinced with his victory after the flames in the area had subsided. And then, I started creeping up from behind when he was laughing.

“Well, with this, do you understand how spoiled you are?” (Sirius)

“Damn it... damn it... this can’t be true. My... my Flames... will not lose to anyone!” (Vagle)

His heart was not broken yet, so when I stepped forward to give him another hit...

someone came out from behind. When I turned around...

“I won’t let you do that to the Holy Knight!” (??)

Over there was someone who I saw when I met Ashley. It was a man like a guard equipped with full-body armor and he was brandishing a sword.

I ward off the sword swung down with a knife, and while taking his arm, I knocked him down on the ground by going around his back, but since a lump of fireballs and rocks fell from the sky at the same time, I made a huge leap to the back to avoid it.

The man, who was late to escape, fell victim to the fireballs and rocks. Without concerning about that man, I tried to confirm the surroundings by invoking [Search], and I noticed that I was surrounded by men who appeared, one after another, from the shadows.

Since I was focusing on avoiding Vagle’s assault until this time, I became a bit lax at searching for enemies in a wide range.

When I quietly reflected while letting out a sigh, a believer, who wore a robe and a mask, was approaching Vagle.

No matter how I looked at them, I thought that they were the reinforcements, but he was glaring at the believer, who appeared while holding his left hand.

“Yo-you guys... what are you doing here?” (Vagle)

“It’s Dolgar-sama’s order. It was after Vagle-sama went out this morning. Since Holy Knight’s recent conducts were overlooked, this is to keep an eye on you.” (??)

“Are you kidding me!? Go home and guard that bastard!” (Vagle)

“I can’t quietly return in such a situation. We had arrived earlier, but... we never thought that you would be driven down this much.” (??)

“I am not driven down! I only have a hard time fighting because of his mantle!” (Vagle)

Generally, I thought that Vagle should be pleased when the reinforcements came, but his pride seemed not to allow it.

Judging from their conversation, were these guys' true identities exclusive guards of Dolgar?

In addition, the air that I felt from him was from someone who lived on the 'other side' of the world. Apparently, Dolgar seemed to understand the necessity of the 'other side'.

"It is a fact that you have been driven down. We will help you, no matter what you say."  
(??)

"I told you, I, alone—... gyaarhh!" (Vagle)

The masked believer suddenly shot a flame and burned the wound on Vagle's left hand.

They were... not his companions. That burned the wound and closed it. It was probably to suppress it from bleeding any further.

"Arghh... aa... Wha-what are... doing..." (Vagle)

"Have you forgotten? The treatment from Water Spells doesn't work well on you, right? Since there is no time to relax, I am forced to take such a measure. Forgive me."  
(??)

"Damn it... Why... such..." (Vagle)

"You may be angry, but please direct your anger at him. We will stop his movements."  
(??)

There was no mercy if they knew about the 'other side'.

And as opponents who could rationally think and throw down a challenge, it could be proof that they had a reasonable confidence.

As expected, if these guys appeared in a group, I also had to brace myself.

When I drew my knife while turning on the battle switch, the believer, who had finished the conversation, came in front and bowed.

"Thank you for waiting. We will deal with you from now on." (??)

“I will ask you once... unlike the child over there, there is no way that you don’t know about my power, right?” (Sirius)

“Yes... we know. While being the same kind as me, I firmly believe that you hold stronger power than me.” (??)

“But still... are you going to come at me?” (Sirius)

“Because it is my job. Well then... I’m going!” (??)

As the masked believer grasped knives in both hands, magic was unleashed by the believers who stood on the higher ground.

According to the reaction of [Search] that I used earlier, there were twelve opponents surrounding me in all. The amount was strangely large for monitoring, but it might be necessary for an unmanageable person like Vagle.

One already died because he got caught in friendly fire, but with the masked believer, who seemed to be the leader, there were six people equipped with armor who appeared from the surroundings. Plus, there were four people who were helping by using magic from higher grounds.

At the same time, it was easy to avoid the spells unleashed without any plan.

As I avoided them while lightly moving my body, three guards were approaching to fill in the gap, and wielded their weapons.

They were attacking from three different directions at the same time, I deliberately ran towards one of them. I rotated my body, while warding off the spear that man thrust with a sword, and I got around his back by using that momentum...

“Wha—... gah!?” (??)

“...That’s the first.” (Sirius)

I stabbed they knife at his medulla oblongata... and killed him.

I knocked down the man who just died and hit another person in a similar way. Taking advantage of his dull movement, I moved around to his rear, sliced his medulla oblongata and killed him.

“...Second person.” (Sirius)

“Th-this guy... Aahh!?” (??)

“...Third person.” (Sirius)

Furthermore, when I stab the knife at the crown of the shaken man’s head, he fell down while blood was scattering in a grand manner.

Spells were released again from a long distance at the same time, but I leaped over to avoid them, and threw two throwing knives.

Both of them were stuck in the foreheads of those who were trying to cast spells on the higher ground. The spells they tried to unleash disappeared just before the activation.

“...Five people.” (Sirius)

“What ability is this... but!” (??)

Simultaneously with the landing, the masked believer swung his knife from behind me, but I rotated my body after intercepting it with my sword, and I sliced one of his arms off with my knife.

I didn’t kill him in one blow because I wanted to ask him some questions.

But that man’s aim wasn’t my life...

“Guhh However, accept this! Burning flame! [Flame].” (??)

The aim of the masked believer was my mantle.

Touching my mantle at the expense of one arm, he shot a magical Flame at the mantle.

It was a considerable feat. Since the flames spread before I activated the magic formations, it seemed that I had no choice but to throw the mantle away.

I kicked off the masked believer and took some distance. At the moment I took off the burning mantle and threw it away... countless fireballs were brought forth, and I was surrounded.

“If you don’t have that mantle... you can’t avoid this!” (Vagle)

Although he was considerably exhausted, he might have gathered his mana in preparation of this time.

Vagle produced nearly 100 fireballs, they were aimed at me and unleashed all at once.

“You will definitely die this time!” (Vagle)

Avoidance... impossible.

Barrier... no more magic stones, so it was impossible to create walls.

Interception...

“Haa!” (Sirius)

I instantly gathered my mana, and released it outside like an explosion.

The aftermath of that mana emitted was the same degree of shock as [Impact], so it blew away all surrounding fireballs.

“Wh-what?” (Vagle)

“No way... such a thing is!?” (??)

“It seems that you were overly optimistic.” (Sirius)

I was bluffing, but unlike [Impact], which was drawn on the mantle, what I unleashed was purely mana and its range was narrow. If I made a mistake on the adjustment, there was also a possibility of being stunned due to mana depletion.

In other words, there would be a small gap for the restoration of mana after using it. It was a technique that I didn’t want to use too often.

“D-don’t be afraid! If he released that much of mana, his mana is already...” (??)

“You’re too late.” (Sirius)

“What... buhh!?” (??)

Actually, my mana had almost hit the bottom when the guard blurted that out, but I had already recovered.

To make them understand, I pointed a finger and shot [Magnum], and blew off the man's head.

"With this, it's six people. Next is...

""""..."""" (??)

Everyone seemed unable to say anything when they saw a spell that could kill people just by pointing a finger.

Even Vagle, who had high pride, was completely scared, and he finally understood the difference in ability.

"Ga...aa, AARRGHHH!?" (Vagle)

While screaming, he ran towards the town.

Of course, I tried to give chase, since I had no plan to let him escape, but the masked believer stood in front of me, pointing a knife with his remaining arm.

"...I think that it is wonderful to protect him by using your own body, but is he worth defending?" (Sirius)

"It has nothing to do with the man's worth. I just chose the best course of action according to the current situation." (??)

This guy had already understood... that he would be annihilated as he was.

The objectives of their priority were based on this situation, where they let Vagle safely escape and bring back the information about me to Dolgar. If he successfully let Vagle escape to the town, he could achieve both objectives, so it was natural for him to try and stop me.

"I see, you are very thorough. I don't hate an opponent who sticks to their purpose." (Sirius)

"It is an honor to be told that by a strong man like you. If that's the case, will you let us

go?" (??)

"That's impossible. You hold an obvious intention to kill, and it is my style to respond to it. If you want to earn time, how about answering my question?" (Sirius)

"..." (??)

The masked believer kept silent because he was trying to earn a little bit of time, so I aimed my fingers and released my bloodlust.

"How long has group like you existed? If you don't want to answer that, tell me how long have you work under Dolgar?" (Sirius)

"...I can't tell. Because we will have nothing but death if we leak information." (??)

"Is that so? However, I don't think that a cautious guy would do this without enough manpower to his surroundings, so there must be half of the number left, huh?" (Sirius)

Since Mira's Doctrine was the only religion that existed in a medium-sized town, there shouldn't be many people in charge of the 'dark side'.

The remaining half was completely overlooked, but a slight nervousness was seen through the body of the masked believer when I talked with confidence.

"Hmmm... it's a bull's-eye, huh? You can hide your face with a mask, but I can see the agitation all over your body, you know?" (Sirius)

"...You... Who the hell are you?" (??)

"I'm just an ordinary adventurer. This happened because Vagle put his hands on us. If you hold a grudge, direct it at him." (Sirius)

"Unfortunately, we are unable to hold a grudge, since we're going to die. But... we will not die alone!" (??)

The remaining survivors probably had decided too, as they grabbed their weapons and attacked me again.

Warding off the swords, repelling the protruding spearheads, grabbing the handle of the weapons, slashing their throats with a knife after throwing them at me.



Spells were unleashed from the higher ground, but after shielding them with a dead guard, I rapidly shot [Magnum]. It hit two people on a higher ground and there were two people remaining.

During that gap, the remaining masked man and the guard came close to me from the front and back, but I also noticed a strange mana reaction at the same time.

I sensed it from their bellies. From the appearance that displayed the resolution to die... I remembered a certain group in the previous life.

“...It’s a suicide attack!?” (Sirius)

Wrapping a bomb on their body, and if they died, they would die together. In front of me, they were exactly the same to those who tried to do suicide bombing.

There was no bomb in this world, but if a magic formation of Flames was directly drawn around their bodies, that would be a feasible solution.

It seemed that the magic formation had already been activated. Therefore, I didn’t think that it would stop if I shot their heads now.

“Together... we die!” (??)

While spurting flames out of their bellies, they jumped towards me.



— Vagle —

“Haa... haa...” (Vagle)

The town... was far.

“Damn it... damn it... damn it!” (Vagle)

Why... am I suffering like this?

My mana had been consumed until it was exhausted, my left hand was cut, and I couldn’t do anything but escape in an unshapely manner... This was absolutely impossible!

I was the man who could see Spirits, you know!?

Although everyone should be burned by my flames, why did such a...

[This is six people. Next is...] (Sirius)

“!?” (Vagle)

...I just remembered.

Although I just remembered the eyes of that person, my body was naturally trembling.

Those eyes were similar to the bunch near Dolgar, but that fellow was exceptional.

He wasn't a human... he was a monster!

I couldn't think of him as anything but a monster with human skin.

I didn't like this, but I had no choice other than to rely on Dolgar.

I would tell Dolgar about him, and he would plan something.

Wait a second, if I managed to take the woman he led before as a hostage...

“Such a thing... gaaah!?” (Vagle)

While thinking about catching that woman, something like a stone dropped in front of me, and when I was wondering about it, the ground suddenly disappeared and I was falling.

Wait a second, it wasn't possible to fall down.

This road had some undulations, but there was no height to fall down, right!?

While I still didn't know the reason, my body struck the ground after a slight suspension feeling, but my body was still moving.

When I got up and checked the surroundings, I noticed several men had fallen into this wide hole and they were all lying down on the ground.

“Wha-what is this hole!? It wasn’t here when I came earlier?” (Vagle)

“Because I made it just now.”(Sirius)

“Hiii!?” (Vagle)

When I looked up, the bastard who had driven me into a corner was looking down on me.

I was shouting that he shouldn’t looked down until a while ago, but I couldn’t meet his eyes any longer.

Even if I tried to run away, the hole was deeper than I expected and it wasn’t possible to immediately climb with one hand. While I was overcome with surprise, that guy jumped into the hole and slowly walked before me.

“It saved me the trouble of pushing you down. For you to fall into this hole, you seem to be impatient for it.” (Sirius)

“Why are you here!? W-what’s wrong with those guys!?” (Vagle)

“They had been taken care of. Well, you will follow them soon, anyway. This hole will become your grave.” (Sirius)

“Grave!? N-no! I don’t want to die yet!” (Vagle)

“There were people who begged their life, but did you spare their life?” (Sirius)

...Let alone the person who begged for their life, I also burned their families.

However, that was because that bastard, Dolgar, asked me to thoroughly do it to be an example, and when I thought about it, there was no rational explanation at all.

“Th-that was because Dolgar asked me to do it. I was forced to do it!” (Vagle)

“Instead of being forced, I heard that you were having fun burning them with your Flames, right?” (Sirius)

When he said that, he directed his fingers to use that strange spell, so I tried to find the words in order to desperately escape.

“I-I regularly get rid of dangerous monsters outside of the town, you know? If you kill me, who is going to do that!? Do you think the people in the town can defend against the monsters’ assault?” (Vagle)

“You were not exterminating them. Instead, you were venting your anger. Besides, you’re not the only one who can fight in the town. If they depend on you forever, they will not grow up.” (Sirius)

“Will that be alright? If you kill me when I can use Spirit Magic, you will be grudged by those who wanted me, you know?” (Vagle)

“I have dealt with all eyewitnesses and there is none left. So, even if you are buried here, nobody will know. Even if you suddenly disappear, since you did numerous selfish conducts, won’t they think that you are on a journey?” (Sirius)

“Ah... Aah...” (Vagle)

No... nooo. He was right. There was a high possibility for Dolgar to think so.

This guy was... serious.

Even if I could see Spirits, or was from Mira’s Doctrine, he was seriously going to kill me without exception.

“N-no! I will never bother people again, and I won’t use my Flames to do bad things! That’s why, please overlook this time!” (Vagle)

“I told you, that is not the problem. You put your hands on my important person... my disciple. You touched something that you shouldn’t touch.” (Sirius)

“There was no way to know that! I-I beg you, please! I will become anything, your slave or your disciple, for this life...” (Vagle)

“...You want to be my disciple?” (Sirius)

When I said the word ‘disciple’, his bloodlust became weaker, even though it was for a little bit.

Maybe... this guy wanted a disciple?

If that's the case...

"Yes, I want to! I am amazed by your strength! I will do anything, even carry your baggage, so make me as your disciple!" (Vagle)

"You will do anything?" (Sirius)

"Yeah, anything! I don't care about Mira's Doctrine anymore, and I will give up the position of the Holy Knight! If you want, I'll deal with the Archbishop and the Pope, and I will make you become the head of Mira's Doctrine!" (Vagle)

I was brought up as Dolgar's tool since I was a child.

I wasn't treated like a son at all, and since our relationship was all about making use of my power, I didn't feel a sense of obligation to him. Rather, he became so noisy for small things recently, I thought about dealing with him soon.

Yeah, if it was with this guy, won't it be quick to deal with Dolgar?

It was a disgrace to be this guy's disciple, but if I became his disciple, he would surely show a gap. After dealing with Dolgar, someday, I would take an opportunity and kill him.

When I was ready to do anything, he pointed at my robe while narrowing his eyes.

"Take that robe off." (Sirius)

"What?" (Vagle)

"I said take that robe off. When you take it off, put it over there." (Sirius)

I thought for a moment that he might be into men, but it didn't seem so from the point of cherishing that woman.

I didn't know the reason, but when I left on my shirt and pants after taking the robe off, a knife was thrown at my feet. It was a strangely beautiful knife. Was this made of... mithril?

"Next, use that knife to carve 'Loser' on your own body." (Sirius)

“W-what!?” (Vagle)

“Do you really think that I trust you, especially when you say that much? If you want to be my disciple, show me a fitting resolution.” (Sirius)

“Damn... it...” (Vagle)

Loser... Am I a loser!?

He was certainly right, but... I couldn't convince him.

But, if I didn't do it, I will be killed. And I didn't want to die yet.

Grabbing the knife stuck on the ground, his arm... no, if the knife struck his belly while that guy wasn't looking, the skin would be cut just by touching it.

In other words, this knife was made of pure mithril. No matter what kind of person, they would get pierced by this knife...

“What's wrong? Do it quickly.” (Sirius)

Not good. It was impossible to do it that way because I was being watched now.

Damn it... it's only for now.

All I needed to do now was to endure...

[Awoooo——!] (Hokuto)

At that time... when I was wondering about a wolf howling that crossed over, he turned his back towards me.

“...Apparently, Hokuto is also finished with his business.” (Sirius)

The moment I saw the back of the defenseless man, I started to take a step forward to get closer, and picked up the stuck knife.

His back was still turned.

He didn't even show any signs of avoiding. Pushing this knife towards the back of that

guy...

“Wha...?” (Vagle)

“As expected, you have come, huh?” (Sirius)

While turning his back, he received the knife with his palm.

Nevertheless, I couldn't feel a prick response because he accepted the knife through the gap of his fingers.

I quickly tried to get away, but my arm was held by him and I was completely stuck. I couldn't move at all.

Where was this power coming from in such a slender body? Was this guy really a monster?

That guy slowly looked at the trembling me, and loaded his strength to hold my hand.

“Release—... Argghh!?” (Vagle)

“I was judging whether you could do the thing I've said, but... is it still impossible to hide your true nature?” (Sirius)

An unpleasant sound started to emit from the hand, but without releasing my hand, he combined two fingers together and pointed at my belly.

Although the form was different compared to earlier... could it be...

“Your Archbishop will soon follow you.” (Sirius)

“Wait—!?” (Vagle)

A shock ran into my belly. When I looked down... there was a big hole in my belly and the other side was visible.

“Ha...haha...” (Vagle)

“Goodbye, one who can see Spirits.” (Sirius)

What I saw in my fading consciousness was the figure of that guy leaping out of the hole while grabbing my robe.

And in the end, I got the feeling of a huge amount of soil falling onto me...



## **Extra**

In the scene where Sirius stood in front of Vagle in the hole.

“N-no! I will never bother people again, and I won’t use my Flames to do bad things! That’s why, please overlook this time!” (Vagle)

“I told you, that is not the problem. You put your hands on my important person... my disciple. You touched something that you shouldn’t touch.” (Sirius)

“In that case... take back the fee for the meals she ate! She was eating the food in the temple for few hours!” (Vagle)

“Ei!” (Reese) ← Throwing stones at Vagle’s head.

“...” (Sirius)



## **Presenting Hokuto?**

In the last battle, he was embarrassed, since his fur was burned, so he would take a rest today.



# Chapter 92

## The Reason for Wanting to Protect

— Sirius —

“Your Archbishop will also follow you soon.” (Sirius)

“Wait—!?” (Vagle)

After squeezing Vagle’s hand that protruded the knife, I pointed the other hand toward his belly and released [Shotgun].

The shot that was released from my fingertips easily penetrated through his belly. It made a big hole and the view of other side was seen through it.

I didn’t really want to shoot his belly, but I wanted to deal with him in the same way as the masked believer who tried to let him escape, and I thought that it was good idea to see Vagle like that.

Incidentally, the reason for aiming at the belly of the masked believer was to eliminate the root of suicide bombing, which was the magic formation that directly drawn on his belly, with [Shotgun].

After that, Vagle, who was staring at his hollowed body, slowly fell down on his back.

“Ha...haha...” (Vagle)

“Goodbye, one who can see Spirits.” (Sirius)

I collected the robe that Vagle wore and the Mithril Knife. After escaping from the hole, I drew an Earth attribute magic formation on the ground. I dug the hole by using a magic stone because I was in a hurry, but actually, it was enough just to do it by drawing a magic formation on the ground.

And then, the magic formation was activated and it covered the hole, which left Vagle inside. When I properly disguised it, the surroundings returned to normal as if nothing

had happened.

“If you want to tell a lie, you should do it better than that.” (Sirius)

Although he said that he wanted to be my disciple, I could tell by looking that it was only a temporary measure. For example, no matter how hard he said that he wanted to be my disciple, that kind of guy would stab my back if there was an opening.

It would be fine if I was the only one aimed at, but there was a high possibility that he would give a negative influence to my other disciples. The truth was... because I took that kind of person in my previous life, my other disciples became victims.

I judged that it was regrettable, since he had that ability, but... it was already over.

The troubles with Mira’s Doctrine were not over yet, so let’s quickly rearrange my thoughts.

I searched the surroundings with [Search], and after confirming that there were no conspicuous reactions, other than Hokuto coming here, I let out a deep breath.

“It seems that Hokuto defeated the Fire Wolf. With this, Dolgar’s war potential is rapidly decreasing.” (Sirius)

Since I was planning to return to the town after finding the right time, I was waiting for Hokuto to come soon, but... for some reason, he didn’t come closer and was hiding behind a nearby rock.

“...What’s wrong, Hokuto?” (Sirius)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

When I instinctively called Hokuto, he showed his face only from the rock and was sadly throbbing.

It didn’t seem that he wanted to hide himself, but he was like a child whom mischief was found out.

“What’s wrong? Come, I won’t be angry. So, come out.” (Sirius)

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

As I beckoned him while putting up a smile, Hokuto reluctantly appeared from the rock.

And looking at the appearance of Hokuto walking here, I found out the reason why he was hiding.

“...Somehow, you seem to have been in a fierce battle.” (Sirius)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

Hokuto, who had a shiny white and beautiful fur, now had burn marks because of the flames here and there on his body.

Hokuto was proud of his white fur that I admired, so it couldn't be helped that he was embarrassed to be in such a state.

As usual, he behaved like a spoiled child, rubbing his nose against my chest. Since his head was now brought down, I gently stroked his head.

“It is true that I am concerned about the burning marks, but you surpassed that Fire Wolf, even though you had a bad compatibility. You should be more proud of yourself.” (Sirius)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“No matter what happens to your appearance, Hokuto is my partner. Come here.” (Sirius)

“...Woof!” (Hokuto)

When I spread both hands, Hokuto rubbed his nose while wagging his tail, and I diligently stroked his head.

Hokuto finally settled down after I kept stroking his head awhile. And then, I checked his condition again.

“Hmmm... do you feel pain anywhere?” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

It looked like he was fine because he shook his head. I had a feeling that the flames of the Fire Wolf had a considerable amount of heat, but as for the Hundred Wolves, they really had sturdy bodies.

I examined the burned part, but it was only at the tip of fur... In other words, only the surface was burnt, and when I pushed through it, the beautiful white fur was steadily returning.

In that case, if I scraped away the burned part, he would be as before, once I washed him with water.

Since Hokuto's fur was very sturdy, I couldn't do it with an ordinary knife or blade, but it seemed I could somehow do it with the Mithril Knife.

I explained the situation to Hokuto, and I got his permission to trim the burnt parts.

"Alright, you'll be like before, just wait. Because you're the best when you are with beautiful white fur." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

We still had things to do, but there was plenty of time, since our turns were way ahead.

In order to easily trim Hokuto, I had him lie down and I harvested the burnt fur with the Mithril Knife.

While I carefully kept doing it by trimming the unburned parts in order to arrange the whole balance, Hokuto was closing his eyes, feeling comfortable.

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

"Well... I wonder if Ashley and others are doing well." (Sirius)

While thinking about my disciples in action in the town, I continued trimming Hokuto.



— Chris —

“Saintess-sama!?” (??)

“Saintess-sama!” (??)

We sneaked into the town, Fonia, and joined the Saintess faction of believers who opposed Dolgar’s way of doing.

Even so, I was wondering how to let Ashley sneak into the town, based on my plan, but I never thought that we would be leaping through the sky and sneak in. It seemed the common sense of the people related to Sensei couldn’t be understood.

And then, when we approached the hideout of the Saintess faction, led by Amanda-san, the believers who saw Ashley’s appearance rushed over, while letting out loud voices.

“Everyone... I’m glad that you’re safe.” (Ashley)

“Same goes to you, Saintess-sama. You are well and safe!” (??)

“Oi, can someone tell our companions!? Saintess-sama has returned!” (??)

Ashley was right, her supporters were not a lot, and there were fewer than ten people here. Perhaps, even with people who already disappeared, I thought that there were not many of them.

However, these people were really longing for Ashley. They were pleased, while letting out tears for her safety.

When the emotional reunion ended, the believers, who finally calmed down, were puzzled, while looking at me and the Senpais.

“Saintess-sama. Did you come together with them?” (??)

“These people are the people who saved me on countless occasions. They are encouraging friends.” (Ashley)

“Wi-will that be alright? If they are Dolgar’s subordinates...” (??)

“There is no such thing. If they are, I will caught by the Archbishop at this time.”  
(Ashley)

It was natural to suspect us, since we were dressed like adventurers, but the believers conceded due to Ashley’s natural smile and words.

According to the intel sent to the pursuers by Dolgar, securing Ashley was the top priority. It seemed that catching the Saintess faction was to lure her to come out.

In addition to the fact that Reese-san rescued Amanda-san, the believers were convinced when they were given an explanation.

“More importantly, why did you return? The town is too dangerous.” (??)

“...Because I want to fight.” (Ashley)

“““Saintess-sama!?””” (??)

The believers were greatly surprised, due to Ashley proclamation, but that might be natural.

Even if Ashley was being underestimated, she was a pacifist who had avoided things like arguing.

It appeared that she hadn’t even said such words until now. Even Amanda, who heard about it last night, was confused.

“Some of the believers became wealthy and live a comfortable life after becoming the believers of the current Mira’s Doctrine by the Archbishop. But... that is not Mira-sama’s teachings.” (Ashley)

Since Dolgar changed Mira’s Doctrine, the difference in poverty became intense, but it was also true that the lives of the believers had improved.

But, originally, Mira’s Doctrine was about reaching out to people who were in trouble.

“The Mira’s Doctrine that we know is not to make ourselves richer, but to share happiness with everyone. We gathered because of such a Mira’s Doctrine. Didn’t you

become a believer because of that?" (Ashley)

Ashley was firm when saying that, but when looking at her from a close distance, it was little, but her body was trembling. Since they were involved because of her selfishness, the feeling of guilt was immeasurable.

Nevertheless, Ashley couldn't look at the current Mira's Doctrine, so she decided to rise up.

"I can't forgive the Archbishop for deviating the teachings. Pope-sama hasn't returned and now Cardinal-sama has fallen sick... so, we must take action." (Ashley)

"But, our war capability is lacking, and Dolgar has the Holy Knight with him. There will be many sacrifices if we fight them in this way." (??)

"The number of allies has increased. Chris-kun. Reus-san. Please." (Ashley)

As Ashley's instructed, Reus-san and I arranged the package we had in front of the believers, and they started to notice the real identity of the package.

Then, she told everyone the details of the plan that Sensei told us, and Ashley deeply lowered her head as she told them that Vagle won't be in the town.

"I can no longer stand watching Mira's Doctrine being deviated. That's why, please. Everyone... please lend me your strength!" (Ashley)

The believers were silent awhile because of Ashley's conduct, but one person, and then another person, and everyone was kneeling before Ashley.

"Please raise your face, Saintess-sama." (??)

"Yeah, we were here since the beginning because we believe the true Mira's Doctrine." (??)

"In addition to that strategy, now it is a good chance because Saintess-sama has returned. Let us be your feet and your hands, Saintess-sama." (??)

"Everyone... thank you." (Ashley)

It seemed that there were believers who were devoted to faith because they hadn't

been deceived by Dolgar's schemes and bribes.

For that reason, it might also be natural for Ashley to think about Mira's Doctrine.

Like this, we earned the cooperation of the believers in a short time.

The believers split into groups. They held the things we recovered and went to appeal the cooperation of the people who were threatened. They were informed to gather in front of the temple at the designated time.

Since Sensei told to keep our eyes open because there might be traitors amongst the believers who report to Dolgar, even if the information was leaked, they would be attacked before they could make any preparations. In short, Sensei thoroughly emphasized that quickness was important.

There were many things that needed to be done, but we couldn't go out, since our faces were known, and it was dangerous.

Similarly, Reese-san and the conspicuous Elf, Fia-san also would not go out. They would remain together with us in the hideout of the Saintess faction.

Incidentally, since Emilia-san and Reus-san had the ability to escape in the case of emergencies, they went out as escorts for the believers, while wearing a hood.

The time to proceed with the strategy was in the early afternoon.

I was waiting, while continuing the work that Sensei asked me to do, but since Ashley wasn't calm and anxious, Fia-san tapped my shoulder.

"Look, it's your turn." (Fia)

"Since our side is all good, please stay next to Ashley." (Reese)

I was pushed from behind by Reese-san. As I anxiously sat next to Ashley, I let out my voice.

"Ashley, are you alright?" (Chris)

"...Yes, I'm alright. Everyone is doing their best, so there is no way I can complain."  
(Ashley)



“You don’t look fine at all. Ashley. Try to relax a little bit, and calm down. If not, you will collapse before heading to the temple.” (Chris)

“Aah...” (Ashley)

I instinctively stroke Ashley’s head while trying to show bravery.



While Ashley was surprised with a reddened face, she put up a smile. As I aware what I unconsciously did just now, I pulled my hand in panic.

“So-sorry! I unintentionally...” (Chris)

“It’s fine. Thanks to that, I became a bit calm. Ummm, did you use to say that to your sister?” (Ashley)

“...Yeah. She was similar to you, just now. She was a child who liked to pretend to be tough...” (Chris)

I had a sister.

She was similar to the current Ashley, since she would desperately pretend to be tough.

“Even though she was hungry, she pretended that she was not. She was in self-denial, and I wonder how many times I stroked her head and said it...” (Chris)

I was born in a poor family, and I was desperately protecting the only sister I had after I lost my parents.

I worked and went out of a town to collect medicinal herbs, while knowing the danger, and sell them... I thought of dying so many times while earning money.

But my sister was affected by an illness. I wasn’t only having trouble finding things to eat, I couldn’t even afford to buy the medication.

And then, my sister was...

[Onii-chan... later... for my sake... please keep on living.] (Chris’ Sister)

At the end of those words... my sister took her last breath.

I lost my sister and I totally became hopeless, but it wasn’t easy to die after being told to live by her will.

However, I was captured by a slave merchant by a mistake... and I was bought by Gadd-san.

And then, I recovered the hope to live while in contact with Gadd-san. I met Sensei, and...

"I am... like Chris-kun's sister, right?" (Ashley)

"...Yeah." (Chris)

When I found Ashley being chased by pursuers in a port town... I saw an illusion that my sister was alive again.

That wasn't it. I chased after her while thinking so, and when I noticed it, I jumped out to save Ashley.

I was convinced that she wasn't my sister when I heard her name, but her face, pretending to be tough while saying that she didn't want to get me involved, overlapped with my sister's... and I couldn't leave her alone.

Even if I betrayed Gadd-san, who was my benefactor, I wanted to protect her.

"If that's the case, you can think of me as your sister. I want to do something for Chris, who is my benefactor." (Ashley)

"That... I want you to wait for a bit." (Chris)

Although Ashley said that while smiling, it looked like a bit of lonely smile.

...I had no plan to be insensitive until that degree.

Besides, now...

"It's true that I am worry about you because you resemble my sister, but now, it's not like that. Because Ashley is... I..." (Chris)

"Chris-kun..." (Ashley)

It was awkward, but as for me trying my best for Ashley's sake...

"Sa-saintess-sama is..." (??)

"Ooh... finally..." (??)

“I will not approve!” (??)

At that time, the believers who left were coming back, and I noticed that we had become the center of everyone’s attention.

Some were watching with pleasure, and since there were some who were watching with strict eyes, like a parent, perhaps the believers thought of Ashley as their cute granddaughter. That made me think that their loyalty was because of that reason.

“I-I also... about Chris-kun...” (Ashley)

“Wait, Ashley!? Look around!” (Chris)

Ashley, who regained herself, was flustered with a reddened face, but I thought that her tension already became loosened.

Sometimes, a girl couldn’t see things around them, but... I liked Ashley that way.

Although I was about to confess, let’s stop for now. I thought that I wanted to tell her again after everything was over.

“So difficult, huh...?” (Reese)

“The greater the obstacle, the love will burn more and more, I think.” (Fia)

“Good luck you two.” (Emilia)

“If you are Aniki’s disciple, don’t give up, Chris.” (Reus)

I rearranged my readiness while receiving the Senpais’ warm encouragement.

Thus, as the believers returned back, the preparation to gain allies was completed.

Although the tension faded away, according to Sensei, he said that with moderate tension, it could make me flexibly look over the actual scene.

Calming myself, the only thing I needed to do was... proceed in order to protect Ashley.

“Mira-sama never wants a sacrifice. Same goes to the companions of Mira’s Doctrine, please don’t do the impossible.” (Ashley)

“Leave it to us. Saintess-sama too, please be safe.” (??)

“Well then, everyone... let’s go!” (Ashley)

“““Yes!””” (??)

Finally, the morale was raised by Ashley’s declaration, and then, we left the hideout.



Those who would infiltrate inside the temple were Ashley, me and Sensei’s disciples, the four Senpais.

Several believers were trying to come along, but perhaps it was because of Dolgar’s surroundings, they were put together to be the guards.

If we were going to fight such an opponent, believers who had no fighting experience would become obstacles, so only a select few came with us. But since Emilia-san and Reus-san’s strength were seen, they were forcibly consented.

Naturally, they opposed Ashley going for the infiltration, but they consented because she knew the details of the temple’s innermost areas and she requested to directly talk with Dolgar.

It won’t be weird if I was removed from the team, since I wasn’t strong enough due to insufficient training, but somehow the Senpais gave me permission.

“Sirius-sama said to bring Chris in order to make him learn a lot of things.” (Emilia)

“Besides, isn’t it necessary to have a knight to protect the Saintess?” (Reese)

“Please firmly protect Ashley, alright?” (Fia)

“Since I’m going to defeat enemies from the front, Chris just needs to think about Ashley and follow me.” (Reus)

There were reliable Senpais.

I was aware that it was no good to rely on them too much, but since it was a fact that I didn’t have enough strength, I judged that it was better to obey them for now.



[Come out, Dolgar!] (??)

[What you are doing is not the real Mira's Doctrine!?] (??)

[Do you think that Saintess-sama is a traitor!?] (??)

Currently, there were nearly 100 believers led by Amanda-san gathered in front of Mira's Temple.

The main objective was to direct the eyes inside of the temple towards the loud voices on the outside. Hence, it was to make us easily infiltrate inside the temple.

In other words, I judged that those who were not involved with Dolgar would come out, and that would reduce unnecessary injuries and sacrifices in the battle against his guards.

[What are you doing!? Don't you think it is rude to Mira-sama if when you make noise at such a place!?] (??)

[That's our line. You guys twisted Mira's Doctrine, and that made Mira-sama mourn!] (??)

[There is no such thing. That was an oracle from Mira-sama!] (??)

The believers of the Saintess faction and Dolgar faction were facing each other outside of the temple. While they were arguing, we passed through a secret path leading to the inside of the temple, led by Ashley.

While walking through a small cave passage with chilly air, Ashley explained about the place.

"This is an off-limits area, except for me, Pope-sama and Cardinal-sama." (Ashley)

"Will it be fine for us to go through?" (Emilia)

"Well, like crossing the walls of the town, I can also infiltrate the courtyard by using my wind, you know?" (Fia)

“Pope-sama told me to use it without hesitation in case of an emergency. And I think that is now.” (Ashley)

“Well, he must have some personal experiences, huh? Since Aniki is going for trip to learn something like that, I feel a bit sorry.” (Reus)

After going through the cave awhile, we went into a large space and there was a big lake that filled most of it.

I didn’t really understand much about Gods or any of such matters, but it was clearly a place with divinity and it wouldn’t feel weird to call it a sanctuary.

“This is a sacred spring which is said to be the place where Mira-sama took a bath. Let me tell you ahead. Please don’t enter the lake.” (Ashley)

“Amazing. Such a thing...” (Reese)

“It’s really a beautiful place. If we are not in a hurry, I would like to watch it for a while.” (Fia)

“I wanted to come together with Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“When all of this is over, I will ask Cardinal-sama to allow it. Aah, the door heading to the inside of the temple is here.” (Ashley)

I wanted to see it a little bit more, but now it was the matter of Mira’s Doctrine.

We continued walking again, led by Ashley, and she looked back when we arrived at the front of a small door with a handle.

“It is the center of the temple from here on. We will come out to a room for prayers. Emilia-san, I will depend on you after that.” (Ashley)

“Yes, please leave it to me. First of all, let’s proceed with our main objective, which is to secure the Cardinal.” (Emilia)

Among us, Emilia, who would be the most responsible, took out a map of the inside of the temple in order to confirm the strategy.

Ashley, who confirmed the map, pointed at it to mark the current position.



“Uhhh... This is the place for prayers. And Cardinal-sama’s room... is here.” (Ashley)

“When Sirius-sama entered the temple yesterday, I heard from him that there was a weak reaction around here. I think that the Cardinal is here and there is no mistake about it.” (Emilia)

“It is a bit far, but we’re going from the front, right, Nee-chan?” (Reus)

“Yes, we are. Since speed is important, don’t you lose the voices of us or Ashley when you move forward. Later, I will give instructions by looking at the situation, so let’s get ready and do this.” (Emilia)

Actually, Fia-san probably should be the one managing the operation, since she was the oldest, but she refused because she was a newbie under Sensei’s wing after traveling alone for a long time.

Since she seemed to be one of those who naturally supported others from behind, she would quietly watch at the place where she could see everyone.

“Chris, Ashley. Do you understand what you have to do?” (Emilia)

“Yes. With your directions, I will follow everyone.” (Ashley)

“I will protect Ashley.” (Chris)

“Alright. It’s no good to force yourself, you know? Well, we depend on you, Reus.” (Emilia)

“Leave it to me!” (Reus)

And then, we rushed into the temple, led by Reus.



“Here I come!” (Reus)

“En-enemy—...Guhaa!?” (??)

“How did they—... Guoohh!?” (??)

There was no one in the prayer room, but as soon as we left the room, we found guards equipped with armor. However, Reus-san stunned them by hitting them with his sword.

“What is that noise!?” (??)

“Kuhh, there are intruders!” (??)

“Oh Water... [Aqua Shot].” (Reese)

“It’s my turn... [Air Shot].” (Fia)

The guards, who came because of the noise, were blown away by Reese-san and Fia-san’s spells. They crashed into the walls and couldn’t move any more.

There were also guards who didn’t get hit by the spells, since they were some distance away, but they were all prevented with the spells of those two... especially Reese-san’s water.

Apart from water balls<sup>(1)</sup> and wind blades that disappeared when they hit, the rocks were covered with water. They were using a delicate way to drop them on the floor after disabling the guards, and that made me worried about their mana.

“Reese, do you want to skip over for a bit?” (Fia)

“It’s alright. Since these children will come from the sanctuary if I ask for them, I almost never get exhausted.” (Reese)

“They came!? That’s amazing...” (Fia)

“Damn it! Hurry up, tell Archbishop-sama!” (??)

I couldn’t hear their conversation well because of the enemies’ voices, but it seemed that there were no problems from the looks of those two.

It was frustrating because the Senpais were doing most of the work, but all I could do was protect Ashley.

Although they didn’t die, Ashley was watching heartbreaking moment as a group of guards got defeated, so I grasped her hand.

“This is not your fault. And don’t leave my side!” (Chris)

“...Yeah!” (Ashley)

“Haa!” (??)

When I looked up, due to the voice that I suddenly heard, a believer jumped off, with a knife in his hand, from the colonnade of the upper floor.

I instinctively protected Ashley’s back, but my sword swing was delayed in exchanged. It seemed that the opponent’s knife would stab me first.

“Got you!” (??)

“You’re too careless!” (Emilia)

“Uhh!?” (??)

However, faster than him, Emilia attacked from the side, together with the force of the wind, and she kicked the opponent.

Furthermore, Emilia landed on the floor and threw throwing knives at the same time, but the opponent easily repelled them.

“Your agility is good, but your knife-throwing skills are still no good.” (??)

“It seems that you are not an ordinary guard. From that surprise attack... are you a person from the ‘other side’ whom Dolgar hired?” (Emilia)

“Well, if you want to hear it, you can do it after defeating me. With that degree of knife-throwing, don’t think that you can defeat me with a lame spell.” (??) (Recheck)

In addition to the knives, Emilia also released balls of wind, but the spells unleashed were slow. They only had the speed that could finally reach the opponent during the middle of the conversation.

“No, if I know that there are people like you, it’s sufficient if I don’t have to listen to you. And, I will defeat you with this lame spell, like you have said.” (Emilia)

“You are calm, huh? To suffer from that spell, I would really... gofuhh!?” (??)

The opponent lightly moved his body to avoid it, but the ball of wind suddenly exploded and created a tremendous gust, and the opponent was blown away soon after avoiding it.

“You can’t escape from my [Air Impact] by avoiding it just a little bit, you know? Well, I’m not going to listen to you anymore.” (Emilia)

Emilia, who confirmed the fallen opponent with his white eyes revealed, smiled at me while being wary of the surroundings.

“It’s fine if you protect Ashley, but it’s not alright if you can’t defend yourself.” (Emilia)

“...I have nothing to say in return. More importantly, thank you very much.” (Chris)

“Yes, just a little bit more, so good luck. Everyone, there are also people who are good at surprise attacks. Not only from the top, but please also be careful of your surroundings.” (Emilia)

Although the Senpais had cleared the enemies and there was none around, when I thought about Emilia-san telling us to be cautious, Reus-san knocked down a wooden box nearby with his sword.

“Guhh... Haa!?” (??)

And from the crushed wooden box, a person, who resembled the believer who attacked me earlier, fell down.

Really, what could have possibly happened to the intuition of these people?

“If it was Aniki, he would hide in a better place!” (Reus)

“You’re right. It may not be weird if Sirius suddenly came out from the ground.” (Fia)

“What a coincidence, Fia-san. I was also thinking the same.” (Emilia)

Although I hadn’t hung around them for a long time, I was also convinced when they said that it wouldn’t be weird if Sensei could do that.



After that, the guards attacked us several times, but they were all cleared by the hands of the Senpais, and we were smoothly progressing.

In addition, even though the ‘other side’ people were hiding and doing surprise attacks like Emilia-san had mentioned, Reus-san and Emilia-san noticed them beforehand and knocked them out.

“Uhhh... I don’t really understand, but how do you know?” (Chris)

“If you train under Sirius-sama, you’ll understand, even if you don’t like it.” (Emilia)

“If Aniki goes all-out, you won’t even notice when he appears behind you...” (Reus)

Standing behind the opponent and reading their breathing, it seemed to be a synchronization technique that made their presence undetectable. I didn’t feel like I could do it.

“The door behind that corner is Cardinal-sama’s room!” (Ashley)

“Nee-chan, there is someone inside!” (Reus)

“Yes, proceed with caution!” (Emilia)

And when they stepped into the room, there was an Obaa-san sleeping in a bed at a corner of the large room.

She seemed to be a gentle Obaa-san of a considerable age, but her face was thin and seemed pretty weakened.

“Cardinal-sama!” (Ashley)

“Do not move! If you do anymore than that, we won’t know what will happen to her life.” (??)

It was proven that she was the Cardinal based on Ashley’s calling, but now she was about to be struck with a knife by a believer who appeared from behind.

“Dolgar-dono will be here soon. Will you quietly remain until then?” (??)

“Please, wait! If you want a hostage, let me be the hostage instead!” (Ashley)

“Nope. I don’t need a hostage who will move imprudently now.” (??)

Thinking of the weakened Cardinal, Ashley offered herself to be the hostage, but whether the opponent was reading the situation, he didn’t go along with her.

Although Dolgar, who had been driven into a corner, was in hurry to make the Cardinal his hostage, the opponent also might have expected it.

In a situation where they couldn’t make any wrong moves, Emilia-san muttered in a low voice, while secretly moved her hand to the back, and Reus nodded. He pulled out his sword and held it sideways.

“What are you doing? Put that sword away.” (??)

“Say, between your knife and me taking a step forward and swinging this... which do you think is faster?” (Reus)

“Are you looking down on me? Don’t speak nonsense and put that down!” (??)

“I swing this ‘guy’ every day, and I can handle it like my own hand. It is easy to slice only your hand, you know?” (Reus)

“My Wind spells are also quick. I’m not sure about cutting with a windblade... do you want to try it?” (Emilia)

“Pl-please stop! Cardinal-sama is in danger!” (Ashley)

Ashley tried to stop them, but Emilia-san and Reus-san were getting ready without listening to her.

I saw that the opponent was flustered when hearing that it wasn’t a joke, due to the bloodlust unleashed from those two. Emilia took only a step forward, and the moment when the opponent’s gaze slightly deviated because of that movement...

“You guys... aim well.” (Emilia)

“Everyone... please!” (Fia)

Together with Fia-san's muttering, strong winds wrapped around the knife held by the believer, and it quickly sprung up from his hand.

The knife dropped because of that shock and was repelled by a water ball that Reese shot and it pierced through the wall. The opponent remained, then fainted because he was beaten by Reus-san and Emilia-san.

"If you want to take a hostage, you should have done it with more people." (Emilia)

"If it was us, we need more than two people!" (Reus)

The Senpais gave a light high-five, while approaching the bed. On the other hand, Ashley and I were staring at them in surprise.

Their actions were coordinated to a terrifying degree, they didn't even do anything like a conversation.

The Senpais... were really reliable.

"Ashley. This person is actually the Cardinal, right?" (Emilia)

"Y-yes! That's right. She is so thin... poor her." (Ashley)

"I wonder if somebody made her drink a poison? Anyway, I will treat her." (Reese)

Everyone gathered around the bed, and then Reese surrounded the Cardinal with magical water and started with the treatment.

The treatment continued awhile and by the time the water disappeared, a slight redness returned to the Cardinal's face, which was pale.

"I think Sirius-san will know about this in detail, but it seems that it is impossible to immediately move her, as of right now. But, don't worry. There's nothing unusual with her life." (Reese)

"Really!? Aah... That's great..." (Ashley)

When the relieved Ashley clasped the Cardinal's hand, Reus-san suddenly held his sword toward the door.

I also noticed that something was happening, due to that movement. When I stood to protect Ashley, the door opened and several believers rushed into the room.

“...It can’t be. They have fought up to here?” (Dolgar)

“...Archbishop.” (Ashley)

A man wearing a fine gown that appeared he was the Archbishop of the enemies, Dolgar.



## Extra

At that time, Sirius and Hokuto were...

“...Did I make a small mistake with the scrapping? What do you think, Hokuto?” (Sirius)

“Woof! Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Hmm... You think so, too? It is hard to achieve the whole balance.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Would you rather have it like a boldly Mohican? It will look awesome if the mane stretches out, I guess.” (Sirius)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“Hahaha, it was a joke, you know? You are the best just as you are.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

It seemed that they were in a good mood like a pair of lovers.



# Chapter 93

## Advent

— Chris —

The believers who rushed into the room, were wearing robes, and from the atmosphere, they were of a similar kind to those who made a surprise attack on us.

However, the number of enemies was five. Senpais, then, were quickly moving to locations where they could easily protect Ashley and the sleeping Cardinal.

And then, he finally came in. After Dolgar, who was wearing extravagant robes attached with ornaments, confirmed our faces, he was staring at Ashley.

“I was wondering who infiltrated when I received the report, but it was the traitor, the former Saintess.” (Dolgar)

“Uhh... I’m not going to be defeated!” (Ashley)

Ashley had faltered for a moment, but she undauntedly glared back.

They glared at each other awhile, but when Dolgar confirmed that Ashley would not averted her eyes, he let out a sigh as if he was annoyed.

“Hmmm, you would look away before this, but it seems that you have grown a little.” (Dolgar)

“Of course. For everyone’s sake, I won’t hesitate because of you.” (Ashley)

“In short, the group outside is all your doing? You’ve not only defeated my guards, but you’re also trying to confuse Mira’s Doctrine... what on earth are you going to do? These are unlikely the actions taken by someone who was called as the Saintess of Mira’s Doctrine.” (Dolgar)

“Certainly, what I did is not right as a Saintess, and it may be an act of betraying Mira-sama. But the one who created the disorder was you. You’re the one who changed the

teachings of Mira's Doctrine!" (Ashley)

"Hou. It's obvious that your presence seems to be different than before." (Dolgar)

"If I am the only one affected, I would have no plan to say anything. But, as a believer of Mira-sama, I can't forgive you because you distorted Mira's Doctrine and sacrificed so many people!" (Ashley)

Although Ashley clearly declared it, Dolgar was looking down on her as he slowly spoke, completely as if he was reprimanding a bad child.

In the meantime, the Senpais were nonchalantly discussing in low voices, while listening to the conversation.

"Distorted? You're wrong. This is a necessary act to continue Mira's Doctrine." (Dolgar)

"Necessary act for Mira's Doctrine? Are you saying it is necessary to distort the teachings of Mira's Doctrine and collect money!?" (Ashley)

"This is disturbing. I thought about it from a long time ago, but you should look more at the reality. Mira's Doctrine reaches out to those in need and the religion is preserved when it is supported by people who appreciated it. You know that, right?" (Dolgar)

"Yes, Mira's Doctrine is supported by the believers and everyone in the town. To help and to share happiness... that is Mira's Doctrine!" (Ashley)

"That is a really wonderful thinking, but have you thought about the future of Mira's Doctrine? Did you think that it was an absolute religion that would exist forever?" (Dolgar)

"That is..." (Ashley)

According to Ashley, there were several ways to get donations for Mira's Doctrine, but the main source seemed to be contributions from the people in town goodwill and those who believed it.

Those who lived in Fonia appreciated Mira-sama, and I personally donated as a goodwill, but now, it was unusual for the temple's side to remind people about it.

Of course, the one who had changed was Dolgar. It appeared that they were asking

donations by saying it would be for big constructions at the temple, but suspicious people might come out.

“Mira’s Doctrine doesn’t have solid income sources. If something happens in the future and the goodwill of the people in the town is gone, Mira’s Doctrine will disappear, rather than being stagnated. That’s why I spread the teachings to prevent it, changing Mira’s Doctrine in order to collect offerings for the sake of preservation.” (Dolgar)

“I don’t even understand what are you trying to say, but Pope-sama and Cardinal-sama are unlikely to seek for such changes. Why did you decide that on your own!?” (Ashley)

“The Pope hasn’t returned, while the Cardinal has fallen sick with an incurable disease and I couldn’t properly ask her. And as a traitor and lowly criminal, you have stopped giving Mira-sama’s oracles. In this situation, who can make the decision other than me?” (Dolgar)

“If that’s the case, consult with other believers—...” (Ashley)

“What a foolish answer. I could change the teachings because that’s what the believers agreed to. Won’t you understand if you think more about this?” (Dolgar)

I didn’t want to admit it, but there was some truth in Dolgar’s words.

If the hearts of the people in town became distant because of something, Mira’s Doctrine wouldn’t be maintained and it would disappear. Even from my point of view, I must admit that it was an unstable religion in various ways.

Ashley also couldn’t completely deny it. With a further confident proclamation from Dolgar, she was perfectly pressured.

“Although it is different from you, I am also thinking about the future of Mira’s Doctrine. Even with this, do you think I am wrong?” (Dolgar)

“It-it’s... wrong. Mira-sama... for such thing...” (Ashley)

Dolgar had a face of triumphant as if to say that it was futile to resist.

Ashley couldn’t open her mouth, since she had a lot of things she wanted to say, but when I thought about it, it would be tough for an innocent girl to fight against someone who used weaknesses and cowardly means.

The Senpais were looking at me, who didn't say anything. Besides being alert to the 'other side' people, they probably wondered what I would do and say.

That's it... if it was about using words, I could use the knowledge that I learned as a merchant when I was under Gadd's wing.

"Wait a sec. I'm trying to conclude various things that you have said, but there are a lot of holes." (Chris)

"Chris-kun?" (Ashley)

"What are you? An unrelated outsider should keep silent." (Dolgar)

He directed a sharp gaze, but it wasn't amounting too much compared to Sensei's and Gadd-san's.

[If it seems like you can't get an advantage over your opponent, make fun of them. Overpower them as much as you can, as if you're going to steal money from them.] (Gadd)

While I remembered Gadd-san's teachings, I narrowed my eyes to look down on Dolgar.

"I am certainly a man who's got nothing to do with Mira's Doctrine. But you know, I always asked about the teachings of Mira's Doctrine and how things should be according to Mira-sama from the Saintess here." (Chris)

"Even if you know, so what? I am talking to a girl who knows nothing about reality. Don't get it the way." (Dolgar)

"You... although you said that Mira's Doctrine will either stagnate or disappear, the purpose of Mira's Doctrine, since the beginning, is not meant to spread or be preserved, right?" (Chris)

The teachings of Mira's Doctrine were all about reaching out to people in need and to share happiness.

When that was clearly said, I thought that those people were like a bunch who did it for their own self-satisfaction and self-sacrifice, but there was no such thing as spreading the name of Mira's Doctrine because they rescued people. It didn't actively

spread. It simply made people wanting to know about it.

It probably had to spread to some extent, but to actively spread according to Dolgar's view, or to collect offerings, both were not the purpose of Mira's Doctrine.

In other words...

"From my point of view, to efficiently collect offerings... I can only hear it as nothing but as a method to collect money!" (Chris)

"Hmmm... the boy is saying a reasonable thing." (Dolgar)

"Do you think it's appropriate? It's too suspicious when you are in a convenient situation where the Cardinal collapses, and having an oracle stating that Saintess, who always wants to protect the teachings of Mira-sama, as a traitor!" (Chris)

There was no confirmation, but there was no mistake that this person was suspicious because he could suck the most out of Mira's Doctrine. The gorgeous robe with ornaments was too showy for the appearance of those who stood at the top, and that made me want to ask if he really needed that.

Since there was no mistake that the other side insisted that they weren't wrong, all I had to do was to turn his unbreakable firm attitude upside down with everything I knew.

"I told you before that the teachings have changed and the believers consented to it, but when the Saintess wasn't there, there were almost no believers who shared your view. Although I told you to think for a bit, you will understand it when you think about it." (Dolgar)

"Tsk, you went around with that little bit of wisdom?" (Ashley)

"Don't be fooled Ashley! Even if he said that it was to preserve Mira's Doctrine, at the end of the day, it was changed because of personal interest. If it keeps remaining like this, the real Mira's Doctrine you know will completely disappear!" (Chris)

"You're... right. If Pope-sama heard this, he would be absolutely angry because this is not Mira's Doctrine." (Ashley)

Ashley felt depressed because she was unable to refute, but she remembered the

reason why she came here, and she was firmly looking at Dolgar.

Seriously... I was also still a child, but was it really alright for this situation to continue from now on? I needed to watch out. I wouldn't feel calm if she wasn't nearby.

When Ashley got ahold of herself, Dolgar had an annoyed expression while scratching his head.

"Hmmm... if you were still deceived, the trouble would decrease. Why do the children around me never move the way I want...?" (Dolgar)

"I knew you were lying. No matter how righteous you are, you have destroyed the true nature of Mira's Doctrine in various ways." (Ashley)

"Well then, since his true character has been revealed, we're going to step in. How about you sweetly take care of us children? If you want us to move as you see fit, you should display a fitting figure for it." (Emilia)

"I guess so. If it is Aniki's order, I will move according to it." (Reus)

"Even though you can deceive people, it appears that you can't fool children." (Fia)

"What a fool. If you were still deceived, this would've ended without injuries." (Dolgar)

When Dolgar retreated to the rear and snapped his fingers, five believers, who had waited in the surroundings, were all prepared with their weapons out at once.

Even I, who had little fighting experience, also knew. These people... were different from those whom we fought until now.

More importantly, the Senpais were displaying the highest tension, so they might've been strong opponents.

"I don't care about the men, but capture the women, if possible, because they have value." (Dolgar)

They would probably use Ashley to silence the believers outside. It seemed that he desired the Senpais as much as he wanted because they were beautiful women,

In the meantime, Dolgar was particularly focused on Fia-san. Fia-san scooped her hair

with a tired expression due to that smile filled with desires.

“I am grateful if you jump into my bosom. The Elf over there, if you obediently come to me, this will end without any pain, you know?” (Dolgar)

“Unfortunately, my heart belongs to another man. For you, I am sorry.” (Fia)

“Hmm, you were only threatening me with that man yesterday, but what are you doing in such a place? Given the situation, the truth of your story about Elysion is somehow becoming doubtful.” (Dolgar)

“Who knows? I wonder if half is true and half is a lie.” (Fia)

“...Oh well, either way is fine. Now, you are a trespasser who got into Mira’s Temple. The nature of your offense can change in any way I see fit.” (Dolgar)

Although the reason he showed up in front of us was to deceive Ashley, it wasn’t necessary to stay in this place if he failed.

Since it would become a battle, when the time he showed his back to us and left the room...

“I don’t mind if they are hurt a little, but don’t overdo it...” (Dolgar)

“Spread out!” (Emilia)

Together with Emilia-san’s instruction, the Senpais moved out.

Emilia-san and Reus-san jumped out toward the front, while pulling out their weapons, but maybe because the opponents had anticipated that, they calmly faced them, one by one. And the remaining three came towards Ashley and Reese-san, while throwing knives.

The approaching knives were probably painted with a paralysis poison, but they were all blown away by the wind released by Fia-san and struck the ceiling.

In retaliation, Reese-san unleashed countless balls of water, trying to prevent them from coming.

Meanwhile... I was one step behind, and rushed forward.

The Senpais were holding them down, and the ones who could freely move around were me and Dolgar.

I ran straight towards Dolgar, who was aware of the commotion and was about to turn around.

“Dolgarrrr—!” (Chris)

“W-what!?” (Dolgar)

Although Dolgar, who finally realized that he was unprotected, was surprised at me approaching him, he held a knife in his hand.

However, I completely understood that he wasn't use to doing that because of his clumsy movements. I flicked the knife with the sword I had, and then, I leaped into Dolgar's bosom and grasped his collar.

“Damn, a child dares to raise his hand against me!?” (Dolgar)

Whether I was a child or not, I understood, since I was studying under Gadd-san.

Dolgar... what you were doing wasn't because of religious belief, your idea was closely similar to a merchant's.

To put it briefly, a guy like you wasn't suited to be in Mira's Doctrine.

So...

“It was all good if you worked as a regular merchant!” (Chris)

“Ugohh!?” (Dolgar)

I included Ashley's portion, and hit Dolgar's face with all my strength.

Actually, I would like to do it with a sword, but there were various things I wanted to ask him, and above all, I thought that Ashley would hate it.

With the capture technique I learned from Sensei, I made him lie on his face and held his hands behind his back, and then, I struck my sword close to Dolgar's throat.



“Guh... bastard. To do this to me, you—...” (Dolgar)

“Shut up! More importantly, order them to stop!” (Chris)

Although I was able to suppress Dolgar, the Senpais were in not a good situation.

Whether they changed their method of one-on-one, there were three on Reus-san, two on Emilia-san and they were attacked at the same time.

Since they were sticking close to the Senpais, Reese-san was afraid of friendly fire and didn't cast any spells, so in order to help Ashley and the Cardinal, Fia-san was giving full attention to the throwing knives between attacks.

Reus-san, who was attacked at the same time, was starting to be gradually pushed, and his favorite sword had finally dropped.

“Quickly stop them!” (Chris)

“Hmmm, leaving them aside, why you can't do it? Perhaps, you never killed a person?” (Dolgar)

“...” (Chris)

“Did I guess it right? It shows through your expression and actions. Are you a child after all?” (Dolgar)

“I am not a child!” (Chris)

“What's wrong? Your hands are trembling, you know? Or are you hesitating because of the ex-Saintess? I see, you don't want to show blood to that innocent little girl.” (Dolgar)

I couldn't hide the unrest due to Dolgar's words that easily saw through the reason.

Even though I was still inexperienced, this person's ability to see through weaknesses was real. And although his life was clearly held in my hands, it was expected that he could retort without fear, even if he was angry.

Damn it... I knew that he was trying to earn time.

If I didn't do anything at all, they would defeat the Senpais, and lastly, they would aim for the defenseless Ashley.

But, I didn't want to show the appearance of me killing people to Ashley.

"She is an innocent girl who even worries about people who are unrelated. I wonder what kind of eyes she will show you, when you kill a detestable person like me?"  
(Dolgar)

When I still couldn't decide and was unable to decide, Dolgar continued his push.

Was I... prepared?

Didn't Sensei ask me if I was prepared?

Perhaps, Sensei wanted to say whether I was prepared to defend her, even until my hands soiled in order to protect her.

And I was being tested, and it was certainly happening now.

If this person was defeated, there would be no reason to fight them. That would help the Senpais, and Ashley would be protected.

That was why I didn't need to be afraid.

I was going to make a decision.

"Ashley... look away." (Chris)

"Chris-kun, don't..." (Ashley)

"Kuhh... you are in love with that girl, aren't you? Will it be alright if she turns a cold shoulder to the one who loves her!?" (Dolgar)

"I'm going to do this because I love her! Besides, you're the one who said to do it."  
(Chris)

While I prayed that she wouldn't at least see this moment, I exerted my strength on the sword...

“Stop it, Chris!” (Reus)

At that moment, a believer, who was attacking Reus, was blown away. He was thrown right over me and flew out of the room.

I was surprised and that made my hand stop. Reus-san stopped the opponent's knife with his Tekkou. He, then, defeated the remaining two in the blink of an eye with kicks and fists that were unleashed as counterattacks.

...Was that it? He didn't drop the sword, he deliberately let go of it. He did it in order to fight, not with a somewhat larger sword, but with quick fists.

“He's right, it is too early to decide!” (Emilia)

Emilia-san, who was sandwiched between opponents, leaped high and made a backflip. She jumped over the opponents' heads.

The opponents instinctively looked up due to the sudden action, but they shifted their eyes when they felt an uncomfortable feeling at their feet.

“If you can't directly do it, how about holding them?” (Emilia)

Their feet were covered with water, and they were covered in it up to their knees.

It wasn't that they were unable to move, but their responses were delayed for a moment due to the feeling of water, which suddenly engulfed them. And Emilia-san didn't miss that fatal opening.

“[Air Shot]” (Emilia)

The balls of wind prepared before the leap were unleashed from both hands. They were at their wit's end as they directly hit their faces, and they collapsed.

After the water disappeared, Emilia beautifully landed and smiled at Reese-san.

“Thank you. Your timing was perfect.” (Emilia)

“Yeah, I made it right on time. The truth is, I wanted to cover the whole lower half of their bodies... but it seems that my focus is still lacking.” (Reese)

“Oh, I think that it is good enough if it creates an opening. It is because I can only use a knife.” (Fia)

“Since Fia-san is protecting us, we can fight with confidence. Well, the rest is...” (Emilia)

I was worried about the struggle earlier to the extent that I had to do something to prove my readiness, yet they reversed the situation in one go.

“It... it can't be!? The elites were... in an instant...?” (Dolgar)

“As expected, the Senpais are at a different level. Someday, I...” (Chris)

The Senpais were walking in front of Dolgar and me, who were dumbfounded with such an outcome, it was a bit... no, it was a considerable matter to be concerned about.

“Dear me, I think that resolution is praiseworthy, but please trust us a little bit more.” (Reus)

“You are not convincing even if you say that. Get some treatment from Reese now!” (Emilia)

“Yeah! Come quickly!” (Reese)

There was a knife stabbed into Reus' arm and the blood was flowing.

He probably judged that the attack wasn't a fatal one, so he abandoned his defense and hit the opponent. Reus-san's readiness couldn't be imitated in many ways.

“Got it. Ouch... Reese-ane, please.” (Reus)

“Good grief... I will inform this to Sirius-san.” (Reese)

“It was good that the blade wasn't poisoned. If Sirius-sama knew that you fought like that, he would be angry.” (Emilia)

“I'm sorry, Nee-chan. I did know about the knife, and it couldn't be helped because Chris seemed to be in a hurry!” (Reus)

“Really? Please calm down because your wound opens when you make a clamor!”

(Reese)

Despite being amazed, I was a bit jealous at Reus-san, since he had someone who worried about him.

While thinking so, Emilia suddenly turned around, because it was a secret that she was becoming a bit impatient.

“Good job, Chris. You can leave him to me after this.” (Emilia)

“Aah... Y-yes!” (Chris)

“Also, let me tell you something. I think that your resolution is splendid, but don’t overdoing things.” (Emilia)

“But I...” (Chris)

“There is no need to be impatient. It may be rude for me to say this, while I am still being protected by Sirius-sama, but since you are still in the middle of growing, all you have to do is to get stronger. But now, please properly discuss this with that child.” (Emilia)

“You ignore me... Guhaa!?” (Dolgar)

“Please keep your silence a little bit more.” (Emilia)

Dolgar was trying to say something to Emilia, who took care of him for me. She forcibly silenced him by twisting his wrist with a skillful way of handling him. I thought that she was beautiful, kind and a truly reliable person.

After that, I finally took a breath and removed the sword from Doglar, but the hand that tried to take a life once was still trembling.

When I clenched my fist while still reflecting, Ashley ran towards me, and hugged me.

“A-Ashley!?” (Chris)

“That’s great... Chris-kun... that’s great.” (Ashley)

It was bad of me to make her worry until she cried, but I had to clearly tell her this.

I lightly tapped Ashley's back to calm her. I looked into Ashley's eyes and declared.

"I'm sorry for scaring you, Ashley. But you know, if I don't do it this time, Ashley will be in danger if the same thing happens from now on. I think... I will do it." (Chris)

"That... is something I don't like. I don't want you to do such a thing, Chris..." (Ashley)

"Yeah, I don't like it, too. However, there are times when it will be necessary for that kind of decision. I want you... to understand that much." (Chris)

Ashley might hate me if I said this. Nevertheless, I clearly told her to show that I was prepared.

At worst, I was prepared to get slapped on the cheek, but Ashley was somehow thinking of something and then became certain.

"Ashley? (Chris)

"Actually... I understand. No matter how much I extend my hand, even shouting, someone will still become a sacrifice. But still, I... don't want to see someone hurt." (Ashley)

After a while, Ashley raised her face with a serious expression, and she was looking into my eyes this time.

I was stared at by those innocent eyes, and I replied while my heart was beating hard.

"It's alright, Ashley. For the sake of anyone, you reach out to those in need and those who are sad. Because I like you being kind." (Chris)

"Chris-kun..." (Ashley)

"Ah!? N-no..... not only me. Amanda-san and the other believers also like Ashley, yeah! A-anyway, it will be alright if you work hard for everyone as usual!" (Chris)

I instinctively said that, but I didn't say anything wrong. I guessed... it was all good.

That's right, Ashley would continue going through her straight path. It would be fine if you just shine like a beacon that guided people.

Even if I had to do the dirty works, it was fine. That was why, I wanted you to remain beautiful.

Our faces became reddened. Nevertheless, Ashley was happily smiling.

“Yeah, I got it. If Chris-kun and everyone wants it, I will work hard as a Saintess. From now on... please support me from the side, alright?” (Ashley)

“Of course!” (Chris)

I would become stronger in order to protect that smile.

Like Sensei and Senpais... my mind and body would become stronger.



Later, the Senpais tied Dolgar's arms and surrounded him while he was restrained, and when they were about to interrogate him...

“Hmmp... I have no doubt that I am captured by you young girls. It is also true that we forcibly gathered money from the town with appropriate reasons.” (Dolgar)

When questions were being asked, Dolgar easily admitted his wrongdoings.

Reus-san threatened and pointed his sword at Dolgar because he became concerned that he was strangely calm.

While looking down on Ashley until that point, it made me angry and I instinctively grabbed Dolgar's collar.

“Why are you so calm?!” (Chris)

“...There is no point to not let you all know. Could it be that you are planning to tell the story?” (Dolgar)

“Of course. This time, but it will be your turn to be judged, instead of Ashley!” (Chris)

“As expected of a child, huh? If this becomes known to the public, you are not only betraying the believers, but also to the people of the town who believed in Mira's Doctrine, you know?” (Dolgar)

In short, if this scandal was spread, the people of the town would feel distrust toward Mira's Doctrine.

If that happened, there wouldn't be a single person who was going to support Mira's Doctrine. There was a high possibility of the worst case scenario, which was Mira's Doctrine would disappear, according to Dolgar's prediction.

"Besides, almost all the people in the temple are my supporters. Whether I am judged because of my wrongdoings, it doesn't seem that the believers will believe what a girl says. There is no doubt that more confusion will occur. Do you guys want to destroy Mira's Doctrine?" (Dolgar)

Was Dolgar so calm because he was convinced that we would not choose to destroy Mira's Doctrine?

"Well then, it's time to negotiate from here on. I will announce that the oracle of the girl was a mistake, and she will become the Saintess again, can I do that? Not just the girl, let's arrange for other believers to return to the temple. Of course, the teachings of Mira's Doctrine will revert back to the original." (Dolgar)

"Are you kidding me?! You, how much trouble do you think Ashley had endured!?" (Chris)

"It is true that a grudge will remain, but it's all good if you guys can endure it. If it goes this way, everyone can return to the temple, and you will not face any distrust from those in town, right?" (Dolgar)

"...There is no way it can't be that easy." (Chris)

"I have the means to do that. Besides, I was originally working to preserve Mira's Doctrine. As a result, both sides became victims, and I am also reflecting that I had overdone this a bit. Since both sides were hurt, can we come to an agreement?" (Dolgar)

Although he was the Archbishop of Mira's Doctrine, he talked well.

Damn it... you were originally a bad person, but why could you say that with such an admirable attitude?

Besides, not only Ashley, why were the Senpais also not saying anything?



“Are you... wondering about the Holy Knight? If you are not pleased with him, I alone can stop that guy from unleashing his flames. I am sharing a secret here, so shall we find a way to convince each other?” (Dolgar)

Although that might be the way for him to survive in this place, there were points that could be considered.

While I was vexingly thinking about the words he said, Dolgar was smiling while waiting for Ashley’s response...

“It’s not necessary.” (Ashley)

Ashley said so with a dignified manner.

“What do you mean ‘not necessary’?” (Dolgar)

“It is not necessary to find way to convince each other. We will go outside of the temple just like this, and we will publicize everything about the truth to everyone.” (Ashley)

“Are you crazy, girl!? Even the Mira’s Doctrine that you wanted to protect will be gone—...” (Dolgar)

“I don’t think that I want to protect the distorted Mira’s Doctrine with your suggestions. Besides, I don’t feel guilty when helping people in need, and I want to do it without hesitation.” (Ashley)

“Th-that can’t be!? Is that what you really want, girl!?” (Dolgar)

“Yes. I do not know what will happen to Mira’s Doctrine by doing so, but if Pope-sama was here, he would also do it without hesitation.” (Ashley)

With that clear declaration, Dolgar became harden with a startle expression.

“Moreover... even if Mira’s Doctrine can’t be preserved and I become the only person left, I will still act as Mira-sama’s believer.” (Ashley)

“Wait a minute, Ashley. I am also here, and don’t forget that Amanda and the believers who are working hard outside.” (Chris)

“Aah... you’re right. I will just continue the activities related to Mira’s Doctrine together

with the people that I know. Therefore, please tell everyone the truth, Archbishop.”  
(Ashley)

“...Has your stupidity reached that far? Should I have taken care of you at that time, after all?” (Dolgar)

The composure earlier totally disappeared. Incidentally, Dolgar looked disappointed... it seemed that the ‘match’ had ended.



After that, Reese-san remained behind in order to treat the Cardinal and Reus-san became her escort to the room. We walked inside of the temple to go outside, while taking Dolgar with a piece of cloth in his mouth.

While on our way, we found the guards and believers staying inside the prayer room, but...

“We are going to tell the truth from now on. Everyone, please come with us.” (Ashley)

As Ashley said that, she led people by boldly walking. The believers were confused, but they still followed her.

There were some amongst them shouting while trying to defy us, but since Dolgar became a hostage, they unwillingly followed.



On the outside of the temple, both the Saintess faction and Dolgar faction were still in a state of stalemate.

It seemed that no one was making a move, but it wouldn't be weird if there was a moment of clashing.

Ashley and the tied Dolgar appeared from within the temple in such a situation. Since they went up to the speech stand outside of the temple, the believers started to make a lot of noise.

“Saintess-sama!” (??)

“Ooh, she’s safe!” (??)

“Archbishop-sama!? Why did you get caught?” (??)

“You traitor! What is the meaning of this!?” (??)

All voices and gazes mixed with various emotions were directed at Ashley, but she continued to accept everything without fear. She looked at Fia-san and talked in a low voice.

“Fia-san, may I?” (Ashley)

“Sure, good luck.” (Fia)

“Yes, thank you very much.” (Ashley)

Having her voice spread in an extensive range by Fia’s Wind, Ashley took a deep breath.

And when she was about to tell the truth and her own feelings...

[...Listen. Oh children of Mira-sama...] (??)

It suddenly became quiet in front of the temple due to a sudden echoed voice.

The believers were confused and they looked around to find the intimidating voice that silenced everything with a single sentence. And then, a believer pointed to the top of the temple while shouting.

“Look at that!?” (??)

There was a person standing next to the sun crest, which was Mira-sama’s symbol, at the top of the temple.

No... was that a person?

Fluttering long white hair, it was a bright white existence with a white mask and mantle covering its whole body. For some reason, there was a circle of light hovering on his head. Even though he wasn't moving, his appearance seems to be hazy.

He was just standing there, but my knees naturally trembled due to the intimidating feeling. Some believers even sat down because they couldn't endure it.

While everyone was looking upwards, when he widely spread his hands, balls of lights were brought forth around him.

[I am Mira-sama's Messenger. Children of Mira-sama... stop fighting.] (Messenger)

There was absolutely no one saying that was a joke. The believers forget about the conflict, and they were looking up, while they were shock.

What a divine appearance. Regardless of which faction the believers were in, they were gradually kneeling down at the majestic voice, which could be heard even if they covered their ears.

However, I doubted the mysterious existence that suddenly appeared, and there were many believers felt suspicious when gazing at him without letting out any voice.

Ashley and I were confused in such a situation, but Emilia-san told me to calm down from behind.

"I understand that you don't feel calm, but let's head down first." (Emilia)

"B-but Emilia-san. What is that..." (Chris)

"Y-yes. I never heard about a Messenger of Mira-sama." (Ashley)

"Although it is suspicious, it is certainly an existence that stopped the fighting. If you lower your head, the other believers will also follow you. So I want you to lower your head now." (Emilia)

Emilia whispered while saying that to Dolgar. He, then, reluctantly lowered his head.

When I looked at Fia-san, she was kneeling down on one knee. Hence, I lowered my head together with Ashley, and... a loud howl suddenly reverberated.

“Awooooo—!” (Hokuto)

The one who appeared along with the howling was Hokuto-san. He was slowly walking on the road leading to the town.

I felt like he got a little thinner than this morning, but his walking figure with beautiful white fur was shining bright enough to not be defeated by the Messenger who appeared earlier.

The believers naturally made way at his grand appearance. Hokuto-san, who came walking through the divided crowd, came before us. He looked up at the Messenger standing above the temple, and...

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

He lied down... to prostrate.

“Ooh... not only Saintess-sama, even that splendid monster too!” (??)

“The Archbishop is also kneeling!” (??)

“We will also follow!” (??)

The believers had to admit that not just Ashley and Dolgar, the sudden appearance of Hundred Wolves also lowered his head. And then everyone who gathered in front of the temple lowered their heads.

[Children of Mira-sama, look.] (Messenger)

When I raised my face again at the resounding voice, the Messenger raised one hand high, and a gigantic ball of light was brought forth far up above the sky.

[To all children of Mira-sama who live in Fonia. Listen carefully to my voice. Gather before the temple.] (Messenger)

Even the people in the town could definitely hear the voice that was directly sent to their heads.

That huge ball of light was a signal sent towards the people who lived in the town, but I felt like I had seen it somewhere.

...Oh yeah! Although the size was different, it looked exactly like the [Light] that Sensei showed us.

Eh? Wait a minute... the believers were kneeling down because of the intimidating air from that ball of light.

As for the Senpais, they naturally lowered their heads, even Hokuta-san, too. And speaking of the person who could make them kneel down... there was only one person who came to mind.

More importantly, the person who fit the requirements was not in this location. I thought that my expectations were not wrong.

[By the discretion of Mira-sama... I will pass down an oracle.] (Messenger)

What the... what was that person going to do with the Doctrine?



## Extra

Preview of the next installment (lie)... The Messenger did as his pleased.

“Oh, oh! That ball of light is seeing your evil deeds. Don’t say that you forgot it!” (Messenger)

“Messenger-sama! It is our first time seeing that ball of light!” (Dolgar)

“Ah, really? Well, you and you, death penalty.” (Messenger)

“Messenger-sama, that’s weird in many ways!” (Ashley)



## Presenting Hokuto

Separating from his Master, Hokuto was worried while heading to the temple.

Master was going to introduce himself as the Messenger, and he ordered to show an appearance of giving respect to the surroundings, but Hokuto was worried about how

much respect.

For Hokuto, the appearance of utmost respect was to lie down and show off his belly.

There were various reasons. Although he didn't really mind to do that for that Messenger... or rather he wanted to do it, but... he was concerned with the eyes of the public.

For him, his Master was the only person who deserved his utmost respect, and he was proud to be under his Master's wing.

He didn't want to spontaneously respect any others, even if it was his parents or God.

That was why he didn't like to show that appearance of wagging his tail to the surrounding people, other than to his Master.

He felt like he was spotted for having an affair, if he compared that to a person.

However, it was absurd to go against his Master's order.

While feeling troubled, Hokuto headed into the town, and continued to feel troubled in the shadow of a building.

[...Listen. Oh children of Mira-sama...] (??)

In the meantime, it was his turn to be on stage.

Still being troubled, the choice that Hokuto chose was...

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

Settling down and kneeling, it was... difficult not to wag his tail.

"Hokuto-san's... tail is trembling, isn't it?" (Chris)

"He's doing his best, you know? Please pretend that you didn't see it." (Emilia)

...That part was found out.

# Chapter 94

## Only Words

— Sirius —

When I finished trimming Hokuto after dealing with Vagle, I was informed by Emilia that they had safely entered the temple. Later, I returned to the carriage hidden in the distant forest from Fonia and made preparations.

After a while, I was informed that they had secured Dolgar, but as I expected, it seemed that there were people from the ‘other side’ similar to the ones I fought.

Even so, Emilia and the rest were able to defeat them with only a bit of struggling. I thought that I would properly praise them later.

However... even though Dolgar was captured and all his guards were defeated, I heard what he was talking about with a calm attitude, and it made me involuntarily let out a sigh.

It didn’t seem to be a problem if Dolgar was held down, since the teachings were changed by someone with a high-ranked position, which was Archbishop, and he turned Ashley to be the enemy of Mira’s Doctrine. In a sense, it could also be said that I had predicted this.

It seemed that Dolgar made a threat by saying that the credibility of Mira’s Doctrine would fall if he himself was prosecuted, but it looked like Ashley had prepared to face the disappearance of Mira’s Doctrine by indicating him on everything.

Apparently, they were now heading outside the temple with Dolgar, so I had to rush for a bit.

I covered myself with a white wig that I made from of Hokuto’s fur that I had collected, a white mask and a mantle. And then, I disguised myself as a figure that’s fit to be the Messenger of God by having my whole body shine with brilliant white color.

“...Anyway, I leave this to you according to what I explained, Hokuto.” (Sirius)



“...Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto was thinking a little, but he reliably replied and headed to the town. Subsequently, I also started getting ready with the preparations.



[Children of Mira-sama, raise your head. And to all children of Mira-sama who live in Fonia. Listen carefully to my voice. Gather before the temple.] (Sirius)

And at the moment... I was standing on the roof of Mira’s Temple in Fonia.

I immediately stood next to the object of the sun, which was the symbol of Mira, but since I was going to the Messenger of Mira until the end, I had to be careful not to touch it.

When I looked down from there, I saw an unusual scene of at least several hundreds of Mira’s Doctrine believers kneeling down.

Not only the attire, I also cast a halo on my head with [Light]. In addition, I shot an even more detailed [Light] to blur my figure by the refraction of light. This was to emphasize the effect of being the Messenger of Mira.

On top of that, I told the disciples to make Ashley and Dolgar lower their heads, and since I made Hokuto, who had a grand presence to prostrate himself as a backup, it appeared that the other believers were convinced that I was a messenger of Mira.

[By the discretion of Mira-sama... I will pass down an oracle.] (Sirius)

I thought that the act of pretending to be the Messenger of Mira, to represent a God, was an act to be afraid of, but I wasn’t afraid of a God who left their believers, who yearned for Her, to suffer. I would rather say that I was getting angry.

Unlike Ashley, who sincerely worked for Mira’s sake, I would like to see how Dolgar, who did this due to his self-interest, was going to be judged.

I didn’t believe in God at all, but if She wouldn’t do anything, even if things like this happened, I would handle this on my own then.

During the time when I talked as the Messenger, since I invoked [Call] without any discrimination, maybe my voice had reached all of the people who lived in this town.

This could probably a forced public broadcasting to let people of the town know about the problems with Mira's Doctrine, but either way, since Ashley seemed to have proclaimed it, then the Messenger would only have a bit resistance from those who spread the teachings.

The only drawback was that the mana exhaustion was intense because I was activating [Light] at the same time.

While, I continued enduring the fatigue from mana exhaustion and mana recovery, I looked down on the believers and spoke about an oracle.

[Oh Mira-sama's children, Saintess Ashley and Archbishop Dolgar. Answer thy question with honesty.] (Sirius)

[Yes!] (Ashley)

[Un-understood...] (Dolgar)

The nominated Ashley's and Dolgar's voices echoed to the surroundings by Fia's wind.

Putting her hand in front of the chest, Ashley knelt down and took the posture of repentance. I thought that was an appearance worthy to being called a Saintess.

On the other hand, Dolgar was probably suspicious about me. It could be slightly seen that he had to kneel down in front of so many people because he had no other choice. He really hated it, but that feeling was correct.

[Mira-sama greatly laments over thee unseemly dispute at this time. She wonders why such a thing happened. Thou confess without leaving any detail.] (Sirius)

I'd heard something about him trying to protect Mira's Doctrine, but if I had to say about this incident in one sentence, Dolgar was doing it for his own personal interests.

Apart from those who agreed with him, first of all, I wanted to solve the misunderstanding of the believers who didn't know that they were dancing within Dolgar's hand to the point that they looked at Ashley as if she was a traitor.

Rather than indicating Ashley didn't do anything, there was a high possibility that the believers would revolt. Therefore, I appeared as the Messenger, and it would be good if I supported her explanation.

[Saintess Ashley, answer me.] (Sirius)

[G-got it! I kept doing activities in accordance to Mira-sama's teachings, but from the day that the oracle was passed down by the Archbishop, I was branded as a traitor who threatens Mira's Doctrine, and I was pursued.] (Ashley)

What I was doing now was already a public trial, and it seemed that there was not much of distrust from the air that dominated the place.

Dolgar started sweating after the truth was being told, but as I expected, it looked like he didn't want to interject, maybe because he would be at a disadvantage if he made a commotion in this situation.

Later, Ashley was driven out from Mira's Temple, but she recovered while getting help from various people. After that, she continued talking until the part which she infiltrated the temple and captured Dolgar.

[...Why was thou trying to fight despite the oracle of being a traitor?] (Sirius)

[The current Mira's Doctrine is eager to make money, but that is not in the teachings of Mira's Doctrine. I couldn't accept it, and that's why I decided to confront the Archbishop.] (Ashley)

[That is a misunderstanding, Messenger-sama! In order to spread and to preserve the teachings of Mira's Doctrine, it is necessary to—... gyaaaaaargh!?!] (Dolgar)

Even so, Dolgar tried to interject to justify himself, maybe because he felt that it was unfavorable to keep silent as it is. However, even this was a sham, I was still the Messenger of their God.

Since it was obvious that he was being impolite, I secretly wrapped Dolgar with [String] that was extended from a blind spot. I poured mana and let him undergo a light electric shock.

[...Thy haven't asked for Archbishop Dolgar's statement. Thou shall not interject without permission.] (Sirius)

“Guh... Haa... U-understood.” (Dolgar)

Although the bystanders didn't see anything when they looked at him, the believers, who saw the Archbishop suddenly writhing in pain, held their breath, and lowered their heads as if I was an absolute being.

Although the blow to Dolgar had been adjusted to the extent until his body was numbed, anyone who was half-doubtful about the Messenger would also change their minds with this.

[A distraction, but... Ashley. Is that the reason of this dispute?] (Sirius)

[Yes, I realized after I was told that I was a traitor to Mira-sama. If I have to accept a punishment, I am willing to accept.] (Ashley)

[I am only asking for the truth, not a punishment. And that graciousness... it is fitting for thee who's known to be thy Saintess of Mira-sama. Please continue thou endeavors for Mira-sama.] (Sirius)

[Th-thank you very much!] (Ashley)

Although she was shedding tears from the feelings of guilt in the middle of the conversation, she looked happy when she nodded after receiving my words.

It was a bit high-handed, but I raised Ashley first, and that would make people understand that she was fit to be the Saintess of Mira's Doctrine.

“Well then, thou asketh they, Archbishop Dolgar. Thou had said this earlier, but in order to preserve Mira's Doctrine, there is no mistake that you are collecting offerings for the sake of Mira-sama, is that correct?” (Sirius)

[Th-that is correct. Although it goes against the teachings, I did everything for the sake of Mira-sama.] (Dolgar)

[...You are not lying?] (Sirius)

[I swear on the name of Mira-sama!] (Dolgar)

Dolgar was startled maybe because he didn't receive the shock again, but he felt that he could go through the questioning and let a small sigh.

But the questions so far had been answered, and as a matter of course, the main subject was from hereafter.

“It is sad that a dispute has happened, but let’s admit that both of thee moved with the thought of Mira-sama.” (Ashley)

[Yes!] (Ashley)

[I am grateful, thank you!] (Dolgar)

[But... Thy have something that I can’t forgive. Archbishop Dolgar, do you think that what you did was something that Mira-sama wanted?] (Sirius)

[Th-that is...] (Dolgar)

[It seems that the children of Mira-sama were convinced when thee delivered the oracle of Mira-sama, but... it is hard to imagine that tis what Mira-sama wants. How does thee explain this?] (Sirius)

It was easy to put in words, but I skipped the questions from the believers who yearned Mira.

Because Dolgar was puzzled while running a cold sweat, he was clearly disturbed and trembling before the believers.

It seemed that he was desperately looking for excuses, but I would pursue the answer without giving him time to think about it.

[Of course, thee can’t answer that. Because Mira-sama doesn’t ever remember giving oracles, even once, to Archbishop Dolgar.] (Sirius)

[Th-there is no such a thing! I certainly received Mira-sama’s oracles—...] (Dolgar)

[That is a fact. There is no one appropriate for Mira-sama but Saintess Ashley.] (Sirius)

In the first place, it was weird for a God known as the Goddess of Love to give such an oracle.

Those who could receive oracles were limited, and it could also be because of tricks, but even a faithful believer was deceived, it was suspicious from an outsider’s point-

of-view, so I clearly declared from the top.

In the first place, the incident this time was because Ashley was true to the real Mira's Doctrine, and it was suspicious for Dolgar to do it for his own personal interest.

[Archbishop Dolgar, the crime of deceiving Mira-sama's children with fake oracles is heavy.] (Sirius)

When I made a clear declaration like this, Dolgar's supporters would most likely disappear.

There were some believers who had been corrupted by Dolgar, but if they looked at how sincere Ashley and the other believers were, they would return to the original.

If they couldn't get used to it, they would disappear from Mira's Doctrine, but I had no plans to take care the problem up to that point.

Anyway, I made [Call] in advance to my disciples, excluding Chris, to inform them that the Messenger was me. Of course, I told them not to let Ashley and Chris know about it.

Since the believers devoutly believed the God they worshipped, it wouldn't be funny if I revealed my name now. If I revealed the truth about me, Ashley wouldn't feel happy, even if the situation was solved.

Even if I didn't do this, if they thoroughly searched the temple by taking advantage of the disturbance, they would find a great amount of evidence. In other words, it was already checkmate for Dolgar. But then, it would take time and Dolgar was likely to run away.

As a result, when they grew up, if their luck was bad, Ashley might have a deep wound her the heart because of Dolgar and the others.

I wasn't really a knight in shining armor.

Those fools who put their hands on my family, I thought that I would definitely punish them, even if I had to pretend to be a God.

And then, all scandals related to Mira's Doctrine and the anger of the people in the town would be bore by Dolgar. Hence, I could reduce the distrust toward Mira's

Doctrine even for a bit.

I would be bothered if I didn't mow the seeds that I had sown. Since I was dealing with Dolgar in the same way with Ashley, there were no complaints.

[Archbishop Dolgar, if you have any excuses, please tell me.] (Sirius)

Having his crimes exposed, Dolgar, who gathered gazes of distrust from the believers all at once, very deeply lowered his head and opened his mouth.

[...Please, forgive me. I have remained silent because of the weakness of my heart. The truth is... I was threatened by the Holy Knight, Vagle.] (Dolgar)

[Holy Knight... he is Mira-sama's child who can see Fire Spirits, correct?] (Sirius)

[There is no mistake that he is that person. The Holy Knight has drowned in his own power, and he was planning to rule Mira's Doctrine from a while ago. I tried to stop him, but I couldn't do anything. I was threatened by his flames and I had no choice but to expel the Saintess. The Holy Knight is the root of all evil—...] (Dolgar)

[That person already doesn't exist.] (Sirius)

"...Haa?" (Dolgar)

Since Vagle was doing as he pleased, his bad reputation had spread everywhere, and that reason, itself, was good enough.

However, since it was a pointless struggle in this place, I took out Vagle's robes under my mantle and dropped it in front of Dolgar.

[Th-this robe is...!?] (Dolgar)

[He wasn't only rampaging in the name of Mira-sama, he attacked me when I gave him a warning.] (Sirius)

[W-what!?] (Dolgar)

[Thou had not only dishonored the name of Mira-sama, thou was a fool for attacking me and couldn't be forgiven. Which is why, the Holy Knight was purified by me, and went before Mira-sama.] (Sirius)

Not only Dolgar, the other believers were severely agitated by that declaration.

It might be justified because Vagle, who was a subject of fear for them, was defeated.

[The Holy Knight, in the end, said that he wasn't interested in Mira's Doctrine. Stop passing the responsibilities to one who no longer exists. Thy should have said earlier that you shouldn't lie.] (Sirius)

[Uh, it's not—... gaarghhh!?] (Dolgar)

I poured mana again toward Dolgar, who lost his trump card, Vagle, and the trust of the believers, and silenced him. And then, I passed down the oracle.

[Here's thy order on behalf of Mira-sama. Archbishop Dolgar. Thy will not allow thee to hold the position of Archbishop again! And thou shalt receive a fitting judgment from the children of Mira-sama.] (Sirius)

[Th-that's very generous of you... thank you very much.] (Dolgar)

Losing all his supporters, it would be good enough for Dolgar, who became like a cast-off skin.

After this... it depended on the people of the town.

Since the whole conversation so far should have been heard, they should have known about the scandals caused by Mira's Doctrine. At the same time, the cause of this incident was known, and that was because Dolgar, alone, behaved selfishly.

When looking around, he was the main culprit of the current Mira's Doctrine, and there were very few angry people seen.

However, since many people were confused and were losing their trust, if I left it as it was, the dissatisfaction might explode.

...There was no other way then, let me do another task.

[Gather here, oh children of Mira-sama. Remember Mira-sama once more.] (Sirius)

A huge [Light] was invoked again in the sky, and it gathered their attention, since it was pouring down like sunlight.



[It is a very unsatisfactory result, but still, Mira-sama will accept everything. Yes, Mira-sama never changes. And for Mira-sama's sake, Mira's Doctrine, which just overcame this incident, will work harder.] (Sirius)

Since the people who gathered here originally longed for Mira, I couldn't completely leave their hearts with disappointment.

The riot didn't occur, even when the truth was known because the evidence was there, but the people that had gathered were wondering what to do.

That was why, for those who were lost, it was fine if I forcibly do this through the words of the Messenger.

[No matter what happened, there is no mistake that you are the children of Mira-sama. Believe in Mira-sama! Believe in yourself, who believes in Mira-sama! No matter what happens, Mira-sama will watch over Her children!] (Sirius)

Although it was cheap incitement by using word-of-mouth with a clear impact, if the other side was a devout believer, the effect from the Messenger who was the closest to the Mira would be dramatic.

With those words, those people in front of the temple were greatly boiled up, and when I noticed, all of them were kneeling and were looking at me.

The preparation was in good order. Later...

[Oh Saintess Ashley. Now, the Cardinal is sleeping, and you will be the representative of Mira's Doctrine.] (Sirius)

[I... will?] (Ashley)

[You should freely express the teachings of Mira-sama to Her children according to your wish.] (Sirius)

[...Yes!] (Ashley)

Ashley was flustered for a moment because she was suddenly nominated, but she firmly stood up, and turned her body toward the believers.

She had already regained the rights of a Saintess, and it was probably the best stage to

convey her sincere thoughts.

If she could properly create a better image for Mira's Doctrine, they should be able to smoothly progress in the future. Restoring the trust lost by rebuilding Mira's Doctrine, since it was going to be hard work from here on, she was lost on what to say.

She was nervous, but it looked like it was going to be alright as long as the smile that was full of hope could be seen.

My work would end here.

[I will return to Mira-sama.] (Sirius)

I thought that I should flashy disappear like a Messenger. So, after recovering my mana, I activated [Light] around myself.

I gradually strengthened the light in order not to damage the believers' eyes and when I released the mana until the intensity of the light became at the degree that the believers couldn't open their eyes, the surroundings of the temple was enveloped with a huge mana of light.

While everything was dyed in white, I started moving to hide in the temple while removing the disguise, but...

[My beloved children. I will always watch over you.] (??)

When I thought about a sudden unusual reaction, it was a warm voice that wrapped everything as it reverberated.

I instinctively stopped my feet, but I somehow managed to hide inside of the temple before the light went out.

I didn't feel the reaction already... what was that?

[...Mira-sama?] (Ashley)

Ashley, who could receive oracles, seemed to know about this.

I thought that was an auditory hallucination or mishearing, but...

“What... was that gentle voice?” (??)

“Saintess-sama was also told! It was Mira-sama just now!” (??)

“Mira-sama has descended!” (??)

“““Mira-sama!””” (??)

Only with those words, the front of the temple was wrapped with cheers. It wasn't my imagination that it was only the believers, even the townspeople were covered in divinity.

When I heard that, I felt warm enough to instinctively think of mother.

[...Everyone, there is no mistake in the words of Mira-sama. And as what the Messenger had said, even if we made mistakes, Mira-sama asked me to watch over you. In order to respond to those words, from now on, Mira's Doctrine will—...] (Ashley)

There was also the words of the God they revered, and the distrust toward Mira's Doctrine had completely disappeared.

I confirmed that the believers and the people of the town were earnestly listening to Ashley's speech, and then, I started walking to the interior of the temple, where no other person was at.

Even so... the voice that heard at the end, it seemed to be directed only towards me, based on the reaction of everyone.

[I thank you from the bottom of my heart—...] (??)

I was prepared to get scolded because I arbitrarily claimed myself to be the Messenger.

Let alone being accepted, I didn't think that She would send Her appreciation.

With a big heart, She was called the Goddess of Love, after all.

To be honest, I expected Her to come out a little sooner, but I heard that they couldn't receive an oracle other than on the altar within the temple, but this God probably had Her own circumstances.

We helped Ashley as a result, and let me say that it was alright, since it cleared away the distrust towards Mira.



"Is that you, Aniki!?" (Reus)

While the speech continued outside, I walked inside the temple, which was almost unattended, and I arrived at the Cardinal's room, where Reus and Reese were.

Reus was in the room, but maybe he smelled me or something, he came and opened the door of the room.

"Good job, Reus. Were there any problems here?" (Sirius)

"After everyone had gone outside, nobody came here. But, we are still being cautious."  
(Reus)

"I don't think that the enemies will come here anymore, but just to be sure, be alert for just a little longer. I will examine the Cardinal." (Sirius)

"Leave it to me, Aniki!" (Reus)

When I entered the room, while poking Reus' head, who strongly nodded, Reese, who was sitting in front of the sleeping Cardinal's bed, got up.

"More importantly, you are safe, Sirius-san. A while ago, I heard a mysterious voice, but what's going on outside?" (Reese)

"It's going to take a long time to explain, so I will explain it later. Anyway, I think that the outside is fine, right now. Lastly, it's about the Cardinal." (Sirius)

As I approached the sleeping Cardinal's bedside, I touched her hand while mentioning a word of apology. When I concentrated my mana, Reese suddenly pulled my sleeve and looked on with an anxious expression.

"Hmmm... you are really tired, right? Please don't overdo it..." (Reese)

"You understood that? I didn't mean to show it on my face, but..." (Sirius)

"Even if you hide it, I still understand it. Besides, I think that Emilia would notice it sooner, right?" (Reese)

It was one thing after another today. I fought against Vagle in the morning, and in order to pretend to be the Messenger until a while ago, I repeatedly exhausted and recovered mana.

It was true that it was completely tiring to barely keep this business going, but I wasn't close enough to collapse.

"There's no problem. After I finish examining this person, I'm done for the day." (Sirius)

While smiling at Reese, I used [Scan], which was used to examine the insides of a person, and examined every corner of the Cardinal's body.

I investigated awhile and found the cause, but I asked for Reese's diagnosis first.

"Reese, what do you see about her?" (Sirius)

"Hmmm... this is just a guess, but I think that she is in a state of losing consciousness because of medication. Since I diluted the toxins in her body with my treatment, I think that she will wake up soon." (Reese)

"Yes, I also have a similar diagnosis. The treatment is also not bad, you have grown up, Reese." (Sirius)

"Ehehe... thank you very much." (Reese)

Roughly speaking, special non-lethal sleeping pills were administered. Hence, she was in a situation as if she was sleeping.

The toxins in her body seemed to have disappeared due to Reese's treatment, and she would naturally wake up after a while.

Although there was nothing unusual with her life force, it seemed that she was in this state for several months. Therefore, it would be necessary for her to be in rehabilitation for a while, even after she woke up.

While stroking Reese's head, I thought about teaching her some new knowledge about treatments. I, then, sat on the sofa in the room and took a deep breath.

While I was vaguely looking at the ceiling as it was, I carefully listened, and I could slightly hear Ashley's voice that came from outside the window. Since the voices of the believers were often heard, it seemed that the speech still went on.

"...It's going to take some time. I hope that Fia is not overdoing it." (Sirius)

"Fia-san too, but Sirius-san is overdoing it much more." (Reese)

"That's right, Aniki. Reese-ane and I will watch this place, so Aniki can take a rest." (Reus)

"I will wake you up when Emilia and the rest come back." (Reese)

Since Reus took the disguise set of the Messenger I had and Reese started to get a bit agitated, I decided to accept her suggestion.

I thought that it was impolite to sleep in another person's room, especially the Cardinal's, without permission, but there was no problem at the moment, since there was no emergency situation.

"If there is something, wake me up right away." (Sirius)

I was probably too tired after all, since the sleepiness suddenly struck when I sat on the sofa and closed my eyes. I wasn't going to resist it anyway.



"Ehehe..." (Emilia)

"...Is that you, Emilia?" (Sirius)

“Yes. Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

When I woke up, there was Emilia’s face with a smile in front of me.

I was somehow lying down while asleep. Apparently, I was sleeping on Emilia’s lap.

Maybe because I remembered Okaa-san because of Mira’s voice, when Emilia stroked my head, I could see Okaa-san—...

“Aaah... I’m giving Sirius-sama a lap pillow. So happy...” (Emilia)

...Since she had a sloppy face of happiness, the illusion disappeared in the blink of an eye.

Although it wasn’t bad in particular, it looked like she was still far away from reaching the level of Okaa-san.

When I raised my body, after persuading the hesitant Emilia, my disciples were not the only ones in the Cardinal’s room, it was completed with everyone else, including Ashley and Chris.

When I stretched my body to sweep the sleepiness away, Fia spoke with a smile, while touching my shoulder.

“Your sleeping face was cute. Nevertheless, it is very rare of you to have a deep sleep.” (Fia)

“There is no way that it was cute. I could sleep well because Reese and Reus were watching things, and it is important to take a rest whenever you can.” (Sirius)

If in the case of an unknown person approached or unleashed bloodlust, I would immediately jump to my feet and draw a knife. If we’re talking about being in a most defenseless state, I had to react whenever I was hit by Shishou, even if I was in the middle of my sleep.

I basically got up early and rarely showed my sleeping face. And it was safe for a familiar person like Emilia to approach, but it might’ve been dangerous for Chris and Ashley.

After confirming the condition of my disciples, and stroking Hokuto’s head, who was

lying down in the corner of the room, I stood next to Ashley. She was sitting next to the bed where the Cardinal slept.

“Good morning, Sirius-sama. Will it be alright for you to wake up?” (Ashley)

“What do you mean by ‘alright’?” (Sirius)

“I heard from Reese-san that you got tired from trying to hold back the Holy Knight. Although I don’t see any injuries, should I prepare a bed for you, if it’s still hard to sleep?” (Ashley)

Certainly, it would be strange for me to be here when I was outside the town. Thanks to Reese, she made an excuse, which included some hidden meanings.

Reese was looking nervous as to whether I was fine with this, but I nodded to say that I was alright.

“No, it’s already alright. After I defeated Vagle, I took a rest before the Messenger suddenly appeared. Thanks to that, I was only tired, but I wasn’t injured.” (Sirius)

“As expected, you saw the Messenger! We couldn’t see well because he was too far, but Sirius-sama saw it because you were near, right?” (Ashley)

“Aah... he was a divine person, covered with white on his whole body.” (Sirius)

Other than the characteristics of the outward appearance, I didn’t explain much of what happened during the time after I defeated Vagle until the Messenger’s appearance.

While I felt ashamed inside, I continued with the explanation, but I would like to hear what happened after I fell asleep, rather than about the Messenger.

“Leaving that matter aside, what happened after giving the speech outside? I was listening halfway, but I inadvertently fell asleep when I got back from outside.” (Sirius)

“Well... as what the Messenger said, when I told them my feelings, everyone forgave me.” (Ashley)

Although I could see that Ashley was tired, her facial expression was bright. She was satisfied to the point of holding Chris’ hand.



“It looked like everything went well.” (Sirius)

“But, it is only about the forgiveness. In order to respond to the words of Mira-sama, we have to work harder from now on.” (Ashley)

“That’s the spirit. I heard from Reese that the Cardinal will probably wake up soon. It’s going to be like a ‘battle’ from now on, you know?” (Sirius)

“Yes!” (Ashley)

The incident was solved, and the smile of Ashley, who returned to being the Saintess without sorrow, was very attractive.

I see... not only Chris, other believers were also hurt by this.



Chris, who was fascinated by such a smile, shook his head, and he suddenly whispered to my ear with a serious look.

“Sensei. It’s only a bit, but there is something I want to know...” (Chris)

“Hmm, only two of us?” (Sirius)

“...Yes.” (Chris)

“That’s fine. Let’s go to the hallway for a bit.” (Sirius)

And after notifying everyone, Chris and I went to the hallway. We kept walking in the hallway, without saying anything to each other.

I walked and tried to find a place without people by using [Search]. We came to a corner of the garden in the temple, and Chris, then, confronted me.

“Nobody will come here for a while. Well, what do you want to hear from me?” (Sirius)

“That... it’s something that I really want to hear...” (Chris)

“It looks like you understand. If that’s the case, I want to ask first. What happened to Dolgar? I barely heard anything when Ashley was there.” (Sirius)

“Maybe because he lost everything, there was no reaction, no matter how much we asked him after the Messenger left. Because of that, he was confined in the reflection room in the basement, for the time being.” (Chris)

There seemed to be an opinion that Dolgar should be given the death penalty from the believers who hated him, but since the advent of Mira-sama... it seemed that the punishment had been suspended in many ways.

In order to prevent him from escaping, the believers of the Saintess faction were watching him, so it seemed to be alright, even if I left it awhile. While I was here, I would sometimes check his position with [Search].

Other than that, some believers who supported Dolgar voluntarily left, and since the discussion about the future of Mira’s Doctrine would be tomorrow, I was taught that this was now the calm before the storm.

As the inquiries ended in this way, Chris’ nervousness lessened and I asked again.

“So, what do you want to ask Chris?” (Sirius)

“Uhhh... Was Sensei... the Messenger?” (Chris)

“Why do you think so?” (Sirius)

“That’s because... the Senpais and Hokuto-san weren’t perturbed at all, and that huge light, too. I think that Sensei was the one who did it. Besides, for such an action outside of common sense, there is no one else but Sensei...” (Chris)

Other than my disciples, it seemed that Chris noticed it on his own.

But, when I saw Ashley’s reaction...

“...You didn’t tell Ashley?” (Sirius)

“It looks like Ashley believes that he really was a Messenger, and if she knew it was Sensei, it seems like she would get confused in various ways...” (Chris)

He appeared to understand the situation.

Although I knew that it was better not to talk, based on his true personality, he

probably didn't want to hide it from someone he loved.

It was easy if I didn't say anything here, but I decided to entrust it to Chris.

"I will leave the matter to you, Chris. Think about it, and decide it yourself." (Sirius)

Instead of making a decision because someone higher than him said so, it was more important for him to make a decision on his own.

In order to protect Ashley from now on, it was necessary for Chris to be broad-minded enough to associate with various actions. Whichever he chose, this was one part of learning.

Besides, we were adventurers, not permanent residents in this town.

Even if he decided to talk to Ashley, and we became criminals who pretended to be a God, it was all good when we escaped to another continent.

"I..." (Chris)

And then... Chris answered.



### **Extra (including 'Presenting Hokuto')**

When Sirius was sleeping on the sofa, the fighting between girls unfolded.

"Although it is fine if you gave him a lap pillow before we came here, you did more than you deserve, Reese." (Emilia)

"Not only Sirius-san, I also like everyone. Because of that... if it is not equally done, I don't think I will like it." (Reese)

"That's so upright, Reese. If that's the case, let's decide it through Rock-Paper-Scissor that we learned from Sirius-sama!" (Emilia)

And while their spirits were high, everyone faced each other.

"Pampering Sirius-sama is a job for me as an attendant!" (Emilia)

“I-I will not lose!” (Reese)

“I also want to give a knee pillow, so I will go all-out!” (Fia)

“I also won’t lose!” (Reus)

“““You, go over there!””” (Emilia/Reese/Fia)

Reus was instantly kicked out, but it was reasonable.

And...

“““Hoi!””” (Emilia/Reese/Fia)

Together with the signal, their hands came out and all of them were Rock.

However, a paw came slightly out of a place... or Hokuto’s forefoot appeared.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Pa—... eh, that’s sneaky, Hokuto-san!” (Reese)

“I would say that Hokuto also made a Rock!” (Fia)

“In the first place, this is a battle between women, so you’re out!” (Emilia)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

Because of that, actually, Hokuto was lying down in the corner of the room feeling unhappy.

But since, his Master would stroke him later, he was generally satisfied.

“...Chris-kun’s Sensei is really popular, isn’t he? (Ashley)

“Yeah. I don’t feel that they are like Shishou and disciples anymore.” (Chris)



# Chapter 95

## The Oracle Ceremony

Several days after the advent of the Messenger at the Mira's temple, the town of Fonia was gradually settling down.

Later, after the words left by Mira, a search within the temple was started by the hands of the believers who had already become calmed, and a great deal of Dolgar's wrongdoings were found.

Dolgar, who had completely fallen to the ground because of the words coming from the Messenger, could no longer do anything and he was imprisoned in the reflection room in the basement of the temple.

A motion of the death penalty was raised, but since it was contrary to the teachings of Mira's Doctrine, the punishment still hadn't been decided. Hence, Dolgar was still imprisoned inside the reflection room.

And all the things that Dolgar took from the believers were also returned to their owners. The money and offerings that were collected more than necessary from the people of the town were also returned.

However, the people of the town rejected the repayment for the sake of Mira-sama. They firmly rejected it.

Although it was only a few words, it was certainly the warmth of Mira's love, and... it seemed that Mira's words had a tremendous effect.



At present... Mira's Doctrine leaders were gathered in the temple's conference room. It was time to decide on an important matter.

"There is no dissenting opinion... am I right?" (Ashley)

""""No objections!"""" (??)

“...I have none.” (??)

The ones who sat at the desk of the conference room were several high-ranked believers and a few representatives of the town.

Ashley was sitting at the Chief Seat on behalf of the Cardinal, who was under medical treatment. Chris and Amanda were sitting on both of her sides.

In the meantime... I was also there, for some reason.

We had nothing to do with Mira’s Doctrine, but excluding other believers, I thought that it was weird to be here at this kind of time. However, since we were rendered for a huge achievement in this incident, it was accepted as normal when Ashley mentioned our extraordinary assistance.

Since there was no need for us all to be here, only Emilia was here next to me.

“Well then, as a tribute of getting help from everyone, I have decided to make the figure of Mira-sama and Messenger-sama.” (Ashley)

“Let’s leave the arrangements to the artisans. I will introduce skilled craftsmen!” (??)

“Anyway, I would like to reproduce the mood of the occasion. Not only of Saintess-sama, but how about making a figure of the splendid white wolf kneeling?” (??)

“A heroic Messenger-sama, please! Since I remember the stature of Messenger-sama well, if it’s about the information, I will give it to you!” (Emilia)

“Emilia, House!” (Sirius)

...My head hurts.

I thought that I understood the present flow, but it looked like the advent of that Mira gave more of an impact than expected to the believers and the people of the town. Apparently, the figure of Mira and me, who was disguised as the Messenger, was to be made.

Apart from the figure of Mira, the figure of me as the Messenger would be made. I couldn’t afford to leak more of the secret about me.

“Please be a little quiet.” (Sirius)

“Ehehe... yes.” (Emilia)

As I stroked Emilia’s head to silence her from unnecessary information, Ashley, who sat on the Chief’s Seat, was happily talking to Chris.

“Since it will become a new symbol of the teachings, I hope that they will be able to make a wonderful figure.” (Ashley)

“Talking about the figure of Mira-sama, is it modeled based on the picture in the temple?” (Chris)

“I wonder about that. But not only me, it seems to be alright because everyone was watching the Messenger. Apparently, it is hard to reproduce that divine appearance.” (Ashley)

“Ye-yes... you’re right.” (Chris)

Chris, who knew that the identity of the Messenger was me the other day, was worried about telling the truth to Ashley, but... he decided not to talk.

He didn’t want to keep it as a secret, but Ashley would be depressed if she knew. In addition, as his Shishou, if I was seen with cold eyes by Ashley and Mira’s Doctrine... he would rather keep the secret to himself.

I left the decision to Chris, but when I thought that it was going to be troublesome, I really appreciated his decision.

“Damn, for Saintess-sama to look this happy...” (??)

“But, he was able to make Saintess-sama smile naturally. After all, we can only admit...” (??)

“No! He is too young for our Saintess-sama! I won’t accept it!” (??)

Chris, who was having a pleasant chat with Ashley, was being directed with gazes similar to a parent who had their daughter stolen.

Since the murderous intent could be felt in some part, from now on, Chris would be in



the bed of nails by the many fathers... I meant the believers when he was by Ashley's side.

The reason why I remained in this town, even though the incident was settled, was because I took a pity on Chris, and I wanted to train him again.

Chris was pleased when I suggested to him train. After all, since he could feel the bloodlust, he was worried and couldn't calm down.

Since then, we stayed in a room of the temple as a result of Ashley's favor, and I was spending the days training Chris.

Now, not only basic physical strength training, he was taught mainly about how to get used to and how to cope with surprise attacks and sensing bloodlust from behind.

"Well then, today's meeting is over. Everyone, today too, let's do our best not to shame the name of Mira-sama." (Ashley)

""""Yes."""" (??)

From here on, all sorts of circumstances involving Mira's Doctrine were reported by the believers, and after deciding concrete measures, the meeting ended.

Because of Dolgar, there seemed to be a lot difficulties, since the number of believers of Mira's Doctrine was decreasing. However, since the motivation of the believers had been rising dramatically after listening to the voice of Mira, it seemed that they were somehow doing well.

And as the believers were sent back to their respective duties and work, only we remained in the conference room.

"Well, are you doing for training today, Chris?" (Ashley)

"Y-yes!" (Chris)

"Aah, can you wait a bit?" (Ashley)

On paper, Chris, who became a retainer to Ashley, basically had to be near her, but since it was necessary to train accordingly, he had his liberty, to a certain extent.

Because of that, I saw Ashley off to do her duties as a Saintess and tried to go to the courtyard to train Chris, but she asked us to wait today.

“Sirius-sama. Since we are finally ready, if it’s alright with you, how about... observing us from here on?” (Ashley)

“Really? But, is it alright to allow me to see it? Isn’t it an important ceremony that only limited people can participate in?” (Sirius)

“You do not need to worry. If Cardinal-sama and I allow it, we can enter together.” (Ashley)

Since Ashley had the situation calmed down from that day, she said that she wanted to do something for me, so I tried asking for a special request.

Originally, no one could participate in it other than the Saintess and a few chosen people, so I requested to observe the ritual of receiving oracles.

An ordinary adventurer would ask for money, but I was traveling to expand my view since the beginning. Because of that, unless I was in trouble with money, I would try to see unusual things.

“If it is so, I wonder if it’s alright for me to accept that offer. If possible, I want my disciples to see it too...” (Sirius)

“It is alright, you know? I will inform Cardinal-sama after this, so please come to the prayer room after you gather everyone.” (Ashley)

“No, I think this should be done the proper way. We will head down together to see the Cardinal.” (Sirius)

I used [Call] towards my disciples, and I gave the instruction to gather in front of the Cardinal’s room, if they were not busy.

“Well then, I’m going to run until Sensei comes back.” (Chris)

“Don’t you also want to see how it is done? You will be involved with it sooner or later, so it can also be a means to get used to the atmosphere.” (Sirius)

“Yes... but I...” (Chris)

“Yes! I want Chris-kun to see it.” (Ashley)

Being directed with Ashley’s smile, Chris no longer had the choice to refuse.

Although Chris was grumbling a bit during the training, it seemed that he was in trouble about whether it was fine to stay here, since he was looking more towards the Saintess, Ashley, rather than Mira.

It was also understood, since he was the only person who had a different thought, but that wasn’t disrespectful in particular, and since I thought that such a person was necessary, I tried to persuade him further.

Thus, by the time we arrived in front of the Cardinal’s room, we joined with my disciples inside of the sanctuary.

“Are we going to hear that voice of God!? I want to listen one more time.” (Reus)

Reus, who was swinging his sword in the courtyard, nodded with great interest as he knew the meaning of the gathering.

“That’s unusual. You are interested in things other than the sword and meals.” (Sirius)

“I mean, God is an existence that can do various things, right? If I ask Her to give me a meal, maybe it will come true?” (Reus)

“...That’s too bad, but since there is no such God, so absolutely don’t do that.” (Sirius)

“Is that so? I will not do it if Aniki says so.” (Reus)

...Reus seemed to be Reus after all.

I thought that it would be better if he wished for a victory against the Strongest Sword or somewhere in that direction.

Reese, who was secluding herself in the temple’s kitchen since morning, and Fia, who was taught of how to cook, came with smiles.

“Isn’t it fine? It is the pleasure of traveling as we gain valuable experience.” (Fia)

“We can listen to that voice of God again, right? Anyway, we are ordinarily dressed,

will that be fine?" (Reese)

"I will change my clothes, but you guys are fine as you are." (Ashley)

And then, when we visited the Cardinal's room, the Cardinal, who lifted her body up, was waiting.

The Cardinal was bedridden since a few months ago, and she woke up awhile after I applied my [Regenerative Activity].

After waking up, she was surprised when she was informed about the current situation, and she was ashamed of herself because she couldn't do anything, but when she looked at Ashley and Chris, she smiled as if feeling blessed.

As she thanked us, she told about the details that caused her to fall asleep.

A few months ago... in order for the Cardinal to fall asleep due to the fatigue, apparently one of the believers prepared the medicine for her to sleep well.

However, the medicine had been replaced by another drug by the hand of Dolgar. The Cardinal drank the medication without noticing anything and she fell into a deep sleep. Even if she woke up, she seemed unable to move and was forced to sleep on the bed again.

As I expected, the Cardinal needed rehabilitation before she could walk. She was getting better with Reese's treatment too. In this way, she was recovering to the extent that she could make a gentle smile.

"Ooh, everyone has come. I wonder why everyone is coming here?" (Cardinal)

"I came to inform you, since we are going to do the Oracle Ceremony after this. Hmmm, everyone..." (Ashley)

"I will speak from now on. I'm sorry to suddenly come here in great number. I would like to say thanks for giving us permission to observe the ceremony." (Sirius)

"Huhu, I don't need your thanks, you know? I was thinking that I couldn't return anything for those things that you had taken care of, so I'm sure that Mira-sama won't mind about this." (Cardinal)

The Cardinal was a considerable old woman. She was kind and always smiled.

Since the short greetings ended, for the sake of confirming her condition with another objective in mind, after getting permission, I medically examined her body by touching the Cardinal's face and hands while using [Scan].

"...There seems to be no problems. If you do not neglect your rehabilitation, you will be able to walk before long." (Sirius)

"Is it true? That's great. Since Pope-sama is worried, I have to walk soon." (Cardinal)

"Soon... is Pope-sama going to come back?" (Ashley)

"I am not sure, but I think that person will come back soon. Don't you feel that, Ashley?" (Cardinal)

"...Indeed, I have that feeling, if it is Pope-sama." (Ashley)

Even though the Pope left the temple and went on missionary trip, it seemed that the ladies had an unusual confidence that only they could understand.

Other believers also didn't complain at all, and since they were smiling when he was mentioned, I guessed he was a mysterious person in many ways.

There were other various matters I wanted to ask, but since the Cardinal was still recovering, I put the matters aside for now.



Later, we came to the center of Mira's Temple to where the prayer room was located.

The interior of the prayer room, which was covered with white stone walls, was wide, and it was also a stunning room with a large altar in the middle of the room.

Since Ashley was changing into her ritual attire for receiving an oracle, I was listening to the story of the infiltration from my disciples while waiting.

"The inside of the cavern system, which is called the Holy Ground, is very clear, and there was a divine lake." (Emilia)

“It was a beautiful lake. I think that is also a valuable experience.” (Fia)

“They made it very clear that swimming is not allowed. I also wanted to show it to Aniki.” (Reus)

“Is that so? I would like to go once then. Anyway, this altar...” (Sirius)

I noticed that the temple was spacious, but there was an opening where I thought that I could sense a strange presence from the altar, it was Ashley, who appeared wearing a divine gown that was clearly different from Dolgar’s and a tiara dotted with magic stones.

Similar to the wedding dress in my previous life, the hem of the gown was long, and since it was rubbing on the floor, she seemed to step on it. However, Amanda, who came together with her, held the hem, and she seemed to be alright.

When I observed them, I sensed mana from the gown and the tiara. Apparently, it wasn’t for the mood, but it was a kind of magic tool used for the ceremony.

And the biggest change was Ashley’s presence, which was usually innocent and had a gentle smile. It had completely changed.

As we were surprised with the sudden change, the Saintess, Ashley, slowly walked down to us and lowered her head, and we also instinctively lowered ours.

“Well then... I would like to start the Oracle Ceremony. Everyone, please take a place a little further away from the altar.” (Ashley)

“Got it. That makes us able to see it. Come, let’s go, Chris.” (Sirius)

“...Aah!? Ye-yes!” (Chris)

I pulled Chris, who was fascinated by Ashley. We, then, left the altar as she told us.

Ashley stood before the altar and held her hands on a large magic stone on the altar.

We watched Ashley’s conduct with a divine presence, but... since nothing happened even after a while, when we looked at Amanda, who stood nearby, she came here and gave an explanation with a small voice.

“Since it is going to take some time, please wait a little bit longer. It is fine if it is a small talk, so please do not hesitate to ask if there are any questions.” (Amanda)

“By all means, I would like to ask some questions, but wouldn’t that get in the way of Ashley?” (Sirius)

“That child’s ability to concentrate won’t collapse with this degree of talking. Besides, everyone is not making any noise with loud voices.” (Amanda)

“Is that so? Alright, I will ask you a few questions.” (Sirius)

Apparently, Ashley was pouring mana into the magic stone at the altar.

However, since there was no response at the moment, something would probably happen once she poured a certain amount of mana.

If that’s the case, maybe I should lend a hand, but since no one except the Saintess could receive the oracle, it could be that...

“If it is about pouring mana, anyone can do it, am I right?” (Sirius)

“That’s right. The Saintess has the quality of mana that can start up the altar, and it depends on whether you have a huge amount of mana in your body. That girl in particular is said to be the most suitable person amongst the Successors of the Saintess.” (Amanda)

The quality of mana... I certainly heard from the person herself that Ashley’s aptitude attribute was the Water attribute, but it was probably not as simple as that. Perhaps, there was a more detailed criteria.

While thinking that far, there was finally some movement seen from Ashley.

“...Activate!” (Ashley)

At the moment Ashley muttered, sweat started to appear on her forehead, maybe because her mana was almost exhausted. An enormous amount of mana started to overflow from the altar, and huge magic formations appeared from the surrounding white stone walls, where nothing was drawn.

The room was covered in the huge magic formation filled with enormous mana, the

tasteless prayer room suddenly changed into a fantastic room, where light started to rise in the room.

However, since the mana was too dense, Chris and Amanda, who were directly hit with it, did not feel that good and their legs were wavering.

“Are you alright, Amanda-san? Please, hold my hand.” (Emilia)

“Ye-yes... thank you, Emilia. I experience this many times, but as expected, it is still too much for me.” (Amanda)

“You can hold me, Chris.” (Reus)

“Reus-san, excuse me. Nevertheless, everyone is alright, huh?” (Chris)

“Hmm? Yeah... I guess it is strange, but I don’t dislike it, somehow.” (Reus)

“Well, if I have to say how it feels... it feels safe.” (Emilia)

Should I say that they became nauseated by this mana?

Dense mana wrapped their whole bodies, which caused their bodies to feel discomfort, but as Chris said, even though my disciples felt uncomfortable, they didn’t seem to have it hard.

And then, the two who could see Spirits had a conversation in low voice behind me, secretly whispering to my ears.

“Sirius-san, I noticed this after talking with Fia-san, but...” (Reese)

“It seems that the Spirits, who were in the room a while ago, went out from here. Apparently, something has appeared.” (Fia)

The Spirits didn’t run away, but they naturally went out.

Just to be sure, I used [Scan], but... the mana waves unleashed were almost repelled by the stone walls. If I was outside of this place, I would barely be able to understand it.

Since we never had this situation before, when I tried to tell them to be cautious...



[It's been a while for me to talk here...] (??)

When that event ended, that voice reverberated in the room.

I only noticed that the prayer room was filled with mana, but the appearance or shape of Mira couldn't be seen at all.

However, since I felt the reaction that I sensed from that time, it seemed that Mira had certainly...

"Mira-sama... yes, it's been a while. And again, I am very sorry. Because of us, people were having unpleasant feelings toward Mira-sama." (Ashley)

Originally, there were two kinds of Oracle Ceremonies.

One was to receive a whim oracle, if they did the ritual at a fixed interval of time, or it was a case to ask a question and receive an answer for something serious.

This time was to apologize for causing a dispute that Mira didn't like, and it also served as a means of a rehearsal ritual after a long absence. For that reason, there were no other followers except Amanda.

And then, when Ashley lowered her head, a warm voice resounded again.

[It's alright. If that made my beloved children happy...] (Mira)

"Mira-sama... thank you very much. From now on, we will continue to devote ourselves for the sake of Mira-sama." (Ashley)

[...I will always... watch over you. And... cherish... the newly tied bond...] (Mira)

When I noticed, the surrounding mana started to become thin, and in proportion to that, the voice of Mira faded away.

The mana released from the altar had settled in, and at the same time, the magic formations drawn on the stone walls also disappeared, and Mira's voice completely ceased to be heard.

"This is it for today. This is the ritual of oracles... what do you think of it?" (Ashley)

“...It was a very valuable experience. Thank you for letting us see it.” (Sirius)

To tell the truth, I was sweating if Mira was going to tell Ashley about the Messenger.

At that time, she offered her gratitude only to me. I wasn't really worried because I was drawing attention, but... since it was merely a stone statue now, I secretly felt relieved.

While I was having various thoughts within me, Ashley took a deep breath and looked at Chris and me.

“A tied bond... right? This is surely about Chris-kun and Sirius-sama.” (Ashley)

“I-is that so?” (Chris)

“That's for sure. However, irrespective to Mira-sama's oracle, I think of you all deeply. From here on, please take care of me.” (Ashley)

We shook hands while replying to Ashley, who bowed with a smile.

And Chris, who had his hand held by Ashley in the end, was blushing while firmly replying.

“Pl-please take care of me too! And, although it is a bit late, your appearance... really suits you.” (Chris)

“Really!? That's good...” (Ashley)

And as Chris and Ashley started to enter a world of their own, I was thinking about the Oracle Ceremony.

I wasn't sure if Mira was really a God, but I understood well that the presence was real and Her voice was heard.

Mira could only speak out in a dense mana unleashed all at once from the altar or... I guessed that we wouldn't be able to hear it.

And then, as I used [Search] when the magic formation was floating on the stone walls, it probably had a characteristic that could repel mana.

In other words, when the altar activated, it emitted an enormous amount of mana, and it was covered with the magic stone wall so that the mana didn't leak out.

After that, the mana filled in the room, a dense mana space was completed, and the voice of Mira could be heard. Finally, the mana inside the room was gradually consumed to maintain the magic formation. Because of that, the mana naturally disappeared.

It seemed that this was the situation that occurred in the Oracle Ceremony.

When I thought in that way, there was a question that remained which was why I could hear Mira's voice when I talked as the Messenger in front of the temple, but... I got the answer due to the contents that my disciples were talking about.

"Aah, is that so?! That feeling a while ago, when I thought about where I felt it... it was Aniki!" (Reus)

"That's right, it was the mana Sirius-san unleashed together with intimidation." (Reese)

"I didn't notice that it was similar to Sirius-sama... I am terrible as his attendant." (Emilia)

"It's just similar, but since it is not the mana that was unleashed by Sirius in particular, you won't figure that out, right?" (Fia)

My aptitude attribute was Colourless, and it was almost similar to the mana in the atmosphere.

Since I was activating [Light] at that time with everything I had, there was an enormous amount of mana in front of the temple. Although it was just temporary, it was a similar situation like in this room.

I guessed that Mira didn't miss that opportunity to speak. After all, it was just a guess of mine.

We got out of the room after parting ways with Ashley and Amanda, who were going to take a break. We, then, came to the room given to us.

I planned to train with my disciples after this, but since the Oracle Ceremony was a

considerably valuable experience, we took a little rest.

While I was picking cookies made by Reese and Fia, and having tea that Emilia brewed, Reus opened his mouth while tilting his head, after thinking about something after the ritual.

“Say, Aniki, in the end of the day, what is Mira-sama? It true that She was amazing, but I don’t feel that She is a God.” (Reus)

“Since we are not believers of Mira’s Doctrine, it’s not that I don’t understand your feelings.” (Sirius)

As expected of Reus too, he probably understood that the question was frivolous, and he only asked it when only we were here.

Actually, I was curious about the Goddess Mira to a certain extent, but since I wasn’t a scholar, I didn’t think that I should know, until I really wanted to.

I didn’t want to turn myself into an enemy towards Mira’s Doctrine, so let’s not bother with things that I wasn’t interested in.

“To be honest, I don’t really understand. However, it is certainly a gentle presence who watches over Ashley, and isn’t it good that we don’t have to force myself to learn it?” (Sirius)

“I don’t really want to learn about it, but if it is not really a God, Ashley and others are going to be disappointed.” (Reus)

“Even if it is not a God, isn’t it fine? Look, even if Sirius-san was not a human, you’d still believe in him, am I right, Reus?” (Reese)

“I see... Aniki is Aniki, Mira-sama is Mira-sama!” (Reus)

Reus seemed to be convinced, due to Reese’s explanation.

By the way, this was my imagination, but I think that Mira was living in the basement of the temple. I was wondering if it was like a special Spirit.

The [Search] that I used in the prayer room was only able to pass through a part of the floor, and there was a secret path underneath that floor.

If I wanted to say it in more detail, the presence that I felt had no appearance or shape, and it resembled the Spirits I felt around Reese and Fia.

However, there was no need for me to tell them about it.

It was my imagination after all, even if I learned the truth, it wasn't necessary for others to know it. Even if it existed in that dwelling, a believing heart would give people strength.

And Mira certainly existed and She was watching over Ashley. Mira's Doctrine was active because they believed in that, and I didn't see it as a problem.

More importantly... rather than knowing the identity of Mira, I was more concerned about something else.

At that time, I asked Ashley to show the altar nearby after the ritual ended and before exiting the prayer room.

I started to investigate while paying attention to not touch the altar...

"It's quite old, but... it is an advanced magic formation. Since when was it here?"  
(Sirius)

"I heard that it was long before I was born, but Cardinal-sama may know about it."  
(Ashley)

I heard it from the Cardinal later that it had existed for hundreds of years, but... I found something to be even more worried about.

This altar was a magic tool. It converted the mana stored into it and made it drift in the atmosphere and it seemed to have a release function.

Speaking of magic tools, it was something made, and of course there was a maker.

Although the name wasn't clearly written, the altar was engraved with a mark that seemed to be the signature of the maker.

That mark was...

"Is this... Shishou's?" (Sirius)

It was very similar to the characteristics of the mark used by Shishou in my previous life.

It might be a coincidence, but... this ominous mark was a combination of petals of a certain tree, which was stabbed by a boorish knife... it belonged to no one except Shishou.

Shishou was a person with a lot of mysteries in the first place, and the mysteries increased even more.

Speaking of the things that I understood... the possibility that Shishou was in this world had become much higher.

However, the problem was more about Shisou's movement, such a magic tool was left around here, and there could be other magic tools that were made by Shishou that exist.

Fortunately, this altar was an almost harmless substitute, but when I thought that there were other unknown magic tools made by Shishou... I instinctively held my head.

Since this was a matter about Shishou, it wasn't funny if she made weapons that could easily blow-up a continent.





After that, when the break ended, I trained together with Reus and Chris in the courtyard.

The training was going smoothly, but when the sun started to set... the inside of the temple suddenly became noisy, and the believers were running around.

When Reus caught a believer and asked for the circumstances, it seemed that the Pope, who was also the top of Mira's Doctrine, came back.

"What are we going to do, Aniki?" (Reus)

"First of all... since we were in the care of the temple, we should go and greet him. Chris, in particular, would be necessary." (Sirius)

"Ye-yes..." (Chris)

Chris, who heard the talk, was tremendously nervous, but it wasn't unreasonable.

In the story heard beforehand, the Pope loved Ashley like his own child, and he seemed like a parent, in a sense. Because of that, Chris had to greet the Pope as Ashley's lover. It was like going to Ashley's father to inform him that they were dating.

Chris was simultaneously moving with his right hand and right foot forward while we headed to the Cardinal's room. All of my disciples, whom I made a [Call] to, were present, but Ashley wasn't there. It seemed that she was there earlier, but she had to leave since she had a duty.

Before the bed where the Cardinal slept, there was a Jii-san wearing a slightly dirty robe with a gentle smile and a Jii-san dressed in adventurer-like clothing with a different atmosphere around him stood up.

"Oh... Are you all the guests that child mentioned?" (??)

"Yes, you're right, Pope-sama. They are Ashley's benefactors." (Cardinal)

"There is no mistake when I see them. They obviously have a different presence." (Pope)



According to the explanation of Emilia, who came earlier, the one with the gentle smile was the Pope, and the other person seemed to be his attendant and escort.

Although that person was an attendant to the Pope... he didn't seem to be an ordinary person, due to how he evaluated us when he looked at us and he had the presence that made us believe that he was an expert. Well, since they were on a missionary trip with only the two of them, they wouldn't survive unless they had appropriate abilities.

Chris was still tense and hadn't settle down, so I guessed I would give the greetings first.

"Nice to meet you, Pope-sama. I am Sirius, an adventurer. Thanks to the courtesy of Cardinal-sama and Saintess-sama, I am borrowing a room in the temple now." (Sirius)

"You don't have to be humble. I am welcoming you all because I heard how you and the children helped Mira's Doctrine. Please, do not hesitate to feel at home." (Pope)

And then, the Pope, who talked to a believer to prepare tea, suddenly stared at my face. Unlike the intimidating eyes of his attendant, they were purely eyes that saw through the depths of the heart.

I didn't avert my eyes, since there was nothing wrong, and the Pope, then, smiled and nodded several times.

"Yes... I have mixed feelings when I see you, but I can't feel maliciousness. Once again, thank you for lending us a hand for Mira-sama and Ashley. Let me thank you on behalf of Mira's Doctrine." (Pope)

"Thank you." (Attendant)

From the gaze of uncovering the true nature, it seemed that the Pope was an observant person who could see the true nature of an opponent just by looking.

And when the Pope lowered his head, the attendant also lowered his head towards me.

"Please, raise your heads. It was something that I wanted to do, so there is no need to worry so much." (Sirius)

"Is that so? Nevertheless... yes, it looks like Ashley was able to meet with good

people..." (Pope)

Although the Pope was earnestly talking and overlooking us, his eyes were fixed on Chris, who was standing upright.

"..." (Pope)

"...I. Hmm..." (Chris)

"...I heard about you from that child. You are Ashley's... special someone, aren't you?" (Pope)

"I-I am Chris! I am also Ashley's special someone, and... I always want to stand by her side!" (Chris)

"Hmmm... those are splendid words. Well then, I leave him to you." (Pope)

"Yes." (Attendant)

Although the feeling of the first impression wasn't bad, but it seemed that the ordeal would still continue.

When the attendant came forward after receiving his instructions, he started touching Chris' body.

According to the information that Emilia secretly whispered in the meantime, he was a dedicated attendant to the Pope, and it looked like he was a former Holy Knight of Mira's Doctrine.

"Wh-what is it?" (Chris)

"...The body seems to be well-trained. Besides, the balance is also not bad. Are you being taught by someone?" (Attendant)

"Yes. My Sensei here... I got trained by Sirius-san." (Chris)

"Ooh, is it you? You have a splendid foundation." (Attendant)

And when I thought that he nodded in satisfaction, the former Holy Knight relinquished his strict expression and made a smile at me.

I understood his intentions, and I honestly explained about Chris.

“Thank you very much. However, I only taught him the foundations, and his strength is because of his continuous efforts. It is about time for him to find his own way to train, but...” (Sirius)

“Hmmm, you can leave it to me after this. If he is like this, I can immediately teach him.” (Attendant)

“Hm-hmm... what exactly will happen to me?” (Chris)

“From now on, you will be my Junior. You will learn under me, become stronger and you will be the Holy Knight to protect Ashley.” (Attendant)

“I will be... a Holy Knight?” (Chris)

“It’s because the son of Doglar has done it. I didn’t want to say this immediately, but I want you to fill the vacant seat of the Holy Knight.” (Attendant)

Accordingly, the Pope looked into Chris’ eyes again, and made an intimidating smile.

“You don’t have to worry, of course. It’s going to be like that if you acquire a fitting strength. But, since Vagle had done a lot of things, it’s going to be hard to restore trust. It’s fine if you refuse to become a believer, but if that is the case, I can’t entrust Ashley to you...” (Pope)

“...I’ll become a believer! I came here in the first place to protect Ashley! I will become the Holy Knight and confidently protect Ashley!” (Chris)

“That’s right, I don’t want to allow it if a boy can’t say that. You will learn a lot from him, right?” (Pope)

“There are many things to remember as a Holy Knight. Come with a mind to die, alright?” (Attendant)

“Y-yes!” (Chris)

Since the Pope didn’t seem to go on a missionary trip for a while, it was said that the attendant was supposed to temporarily become the Holy Knight.

In the meantime, he would train Chris, and repeatedly tailor him to become a Holy Knight one can trust.

Thus, it had been decided that the place that Chris should aim for was the place of Mira's Doctrine.

"Leaving that matter aside, Pope-sama. What shall we do with that person... Doglar? We can't make a decision with only us." (Attendant)

"Hmm? Aah... that guy, huh? He made a mess." (Pope)

"It looks like I was a bit careless." (Attendant)

As the matter with Chris cleared up, they talked about Dolgar, who made trouble.

Although I had my doubts since a long time ago, how did he deceive the Oracle Ceremony when he wasn't a Saint<sup>(1)</sup>?

At first, I thought that it was because he did various tricks, but I understood it after experiencing it once. It wasn't easy to deceive the ceremony.

"I'm sorry, but I have something that I want to ask. How did Dolgar deceive the other believers?" (Sirius)

I didn't think that they would answer because it was confidential information of Mira's Doctrine, but I asked the Pope because I was concerned.

"Hmmm? Dolgar had a similar mana aptitude as Ashley. With that, to activate the altar..." (Pope)

Nevertheless, the Pope easily disposed the secret.

The Cardinal and the former Holy Knight were originally surprised, but... it seemed that they understood as we continued to listen.

A detailed explanation continued as it was, and Dolgar could somehow demonstrate the function of the altar, but it was said that the voice of Mira couldn't be heard.

"I thought Ashley would one day hear the voice of Mira, so in preparation for when that happens, I appointed Dolgar as the Archbishop. Besides, he was good at managing

money, and it was also necessary at that time.” (Pope)

I understood that Dolgar could activate the altar, but how did he deceive the voice of Mira?

He searched for a person with a voice similar to Mira. She was let into the ritual room and let the voice resound with a Wind spell.

And since people were in a state of disorder after being wrapped within the dense mana, they probably didn’t mind a bit of strangeness.

Even so...

“...I have heard about this before, but is it fine for you to easily reveal this secret?” (Sirius)

“I heard from Ashley, but didn’t Mira-sama say to value the relationship with you guys? In other words, you all have been recognized by Mira-sama. If it is you, I think that it will be alright.” (Pope)

“There is no need for you to worry. Pope-sama is this kind of person, and we have gotten used to it.” (Attendant)

Moreover, since he was sharp at identifying others with malice, it seemed that he wasn’t like this to everyone.

For the time being, he was such a person, instead of forcing others to agree, a decision was made about how to deal with Dolgar.

“...It should be a capital punishment if we normally think, but Mira-sama will be sad. To make him understand the significance of reflection... shall we make him go for a missionary trip after several years of confinement?” (Pope)

In a mountain a little ways away from the town of Fonia, there seemed to be a facility that prohibited contact and was used for enlightenment.

Dolgar would be confined there for several years, and the charge of the offenses was to go to another continent for missionary work.

Although he had done things that could’ve made Mira’s Doctrine collapse, I thought

that the punishment was light, but...

“That will certainly disciple him, right? Let’s send him off for a bit.” (Pope)

“No, today is already late, and since we have to prepare for the transport, we will do it tomorrow.” (Attendant)

The eyes of the former Holy Knight were different.

He seemed to be an excellent and a strict assistant, but he had the eyes of an executioner.

He was a type of person... who knew about the ‘other side’.

I see... if I wanted to express the relationship between the Pope and the former Holy Knight, that would be the future of Chris and Ashley.

The Pope who never ceased to have a gentle smile seemed unreliable, but he somehow had an unusual charisma that was adored by the believers. This was also similar to Ashley.

Although they gathered people with that unusual charisma, people who tried to manipulate it and those who had jealousy would also appear. Such people would be secretly handled by the former Holy Knight.

I told Chris that he had to continue doing such things to defend her, no matter what happened.

“That’s right, Pope-sama. You just came back, so please rest for today.” (Cardinal)

“Well then, we will do that tomorrow. It’s been a while, but I am looking forward to eating together with Ashley. Of course, Chris-kun as well.” (Pope)

“Uh! Y-yes...” (Chris)

It was likely to be a very restless dinner for Chris.

While the Pope was smiling, the former Holy Knight respectfully bowed.



After that, they told me about the Pope's missionary work, and we broke up when it was about the time for dinner.

Chris was directly pulled by the Pope, while we returned to our room and were about to prepare for dinner, but apparently we didn't have to prepare the dinner today.

"Yes, eat a lot, alright?" (Reese)

Reese said this when I rescued her from Mira's Temple a while ago that she would prepare a treat as an apology. That was the reason why she was in the kitchen since morning.

And instead of me holding chopsticks, Fia brought dishes before me.

"Since I made this by learning from Reese, please let me hear your impression." (Fia)

"Which... yeah, it's delicious. You said that you had little experience, but isn't this good enough?" (Sirius)

"Ahaha, that's because Reese carefully taught me. But... yeah. I thought that cooking was troublesome, but I am very happy when you said that it was delicious." (Fia)

"It is not as good as Anikis, but Fia-ane's cooking is also delicious!" (Reus)

"...I'm happy, but I have somewhat complicated feelings because of what Reus said." (Fia)

"You're just too much!" (Emilia)

While Reus' head was pushed by Emilia, the harmonious meals continued.

There were probably ten servings prepared, but with us... especially with Reus and Reese, there shouldn't be any problem.

As soon the meal ended, I took out the cake I made in the carriage as a dessert, and my disciples raised voices of delight.



## Hokuto's Struggles in Carpentry

The incident of Mira's Doctrine was resolved, and the town of Fonia had gradually calmed down while there were still some disturbances to be seen.

People in the town who heard Mira-sama's voice were full of joy, and they were also pleased about the fact that there was no more Vagle rampaging in town.

As there were many buildings burned down by that Vagle, the cost and manpower for rebuilding were coming from Mira's Doctrine as an apology.

Amongst such manpower was Hokuto-kun, his Master and Reus-kun.

"Are you experienced? Well, Nii-chan and I together will do the roof." (??)

"Aah, leave it to me." (Sirius)

His Master said that he had the experience of building a simple log house, so he was invited to work on a roof together with a carpenter of the town.

Then, he went up by using the frames until he reached the top, and from there, he nailed strong and heavy boards with nails to make a roof, and because the scaffolding was unstable when handling heavy boards, it was very dangerous and delicate work.

But...

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Hoi, Aniki!" (Reus)

"Alright." (Sirius)

Hokuto-kun got a board from the ground, he handed it to Reus who was in the middle of the scaffolding, and his Master received it at the end and hit the nail.

Moreover, his Master hit the nail with a single hammer blow, thus the speed was immeasurable.



Due to the stunning flow of work, the work of the roof ended while the carpenter of the town was surprised.

“Ni-nii-chan is good with his hands.” (Carpenter)

“Next is the wall?” (Sirius)

“No, it’s enough. Our work is done, so please take a rest.” (Carpenter)

Whether his professional face was crumbling, his Master obediently took a rest.

And when Hokuto-kun rested around the area where the timber was stacked up, he noticed that a nail was protruding from a piece of timber.

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

He wasn’t sure if that was a coincidence or caused by someone’s mischief, but it was dangerous, nonetheless.

Since it was deeply stuck, Hokuto-kun judged that it was better to hit the end, rather than pulling it out, so he swung up his forefoot to drive the nail in.

Of course, he knew exactly what he was doing.

By cleanly focusing on the nail, Hokuto-kun... and his forefoot...

“Hokuto. Let me brush you since I am free.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Pang!

“...Woof?” (Hokuto)

Alas... the forefoot missed the target due to his joy. He didn’t hit the nail, but the timber.

At this time, Hokuto-kun’s time had certainly stopped.

“What’s wrong, Hokuto... Hei, what are you doing!?” (Sirius)

“...Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun ran away.

However, he wasn't just running away.

Hokuto-kun went outside the town and thought that he would pick up new timber as an apology.

He was in no way wanting his Master to be angry.

Yeah, he didn't like his Master being angry.

Hokuto-kun thought it twice because it was important.

“Hokuto, House!” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

But, he couldn't go against his Master's orders.

Hokuto-kun instinctively came back due to his Master's voice and he eventually got caught. And then, he apologized to the carpenter together with his Master.

# Chapter 96

## The Rebirth of Fonia

“...Thank you for waiting.” (??)

Late night... in the punishment chamber under the temple, a heavy voice was let out by a middle-aged man.

The one that was put in here was only Dolgar, but since he lost everything because of the words of the Messenger, there wasn't even a single word coming from him since the time he was being confined in the punishment chamber. He continued to be dumbfounded while sitting with empty eyes.

But now, he had returned to sanity and stood before the locked door.

“Aren't you a bit too late?” (Dolgar)

“I'm sorry. It took me a bit to infiltrate.” (??)

“Hmmp, it's fine. Goodness... although this made them off-guard, it was troublesome to pretend to have lost my sanity. But, this is the end.” (Dolgar)

The key of the punishment chamber was opened by the hand of a man wearing a mask who infiltrated to the punishment chamber, and from there, a slightly thin Dolgar came out from the inside. Apparently, he was given minimum food and water as punishment.

Of course, Dolgar was not allowed to leave from this place.

This was clearly a jailbreak.

And by the guidance of the man, Dolgar wasn't discovered by anyone and escaped the temple.

The man progressed forward on a path with less people because the security of the current Mira's Doctrine was getting loose due to the return of the Pope.

The man and Dolgar, who covered his face with a hooded robe he had prepared, were heading outside the town, but they were stopped by the gate guard before they got out.

It was inevitable, since the time was late at night, but Dolgar managed to get out of the town with an innocent face and the negotiations of that man.

He continued walking along the road that was lit by the shining moonlight, but Dolgar, who wasn't good at exercise, soon came to the limits of his stamina and sat down.

"Haa... haa... damn, I am hungry and have no energy. Oi, do you have any food?"  
(Dolgar)

"It's just emergency rations, but this is it." (??)

Dolgar received a bag with dried meat and bread inside from the man and smiled when he saw wine.

"Well, shall I endure with these? Everything is without taste, but it is good with the wine." (Dolgar)

"It's fine if you want to drink, but I have a question. Which way are we heading now?"  
(??)

"There is a lodge in the southwest that's used for emergencies and it has money stored inside. First off, we will go there, and we will leave this continent before doing the arrangements. Don't worry, I'll pay your additional fee after we reach it." (Dolgar)

"Well, are you going to escape like this? Don't you, Dolgar-sama, hate the fact that you are seen with such eyes by Mira's Doctrine?" (??)

"Yes, of course. But, I will take care of the arrangements while the situation is cooling down." (Dolgar)

Dolgar, who felt good after a long time, didn't notice that the conversation was being induced and he continued talking.

"In that town, the overwhelming deterrent, Vagle, is already no more. If I hire mercenaries with the money I earned, it is not hard to gain control in one go. Or maybe it is good to contact the bandits who are planning to attack this town." (Dolgar)

“What are you going to do with the group that has beastkin among them? I heard a rumor, that elites from the ‘other side’ could barely do anything...” (??)

“I wasn’t sure how it was leaked out, but... they were certainly strong. But, they are not going to stay in Fonia forever. It is only a matter of time until they are gone.” (Dolgar)

“...I understand. Let’s quickly move on. I will go ahead first, but we are already outside the town. There is a knife in the bag, so please arm yourself, Dolgar-sama.” (??)

“Hmm... sure.” (Dolgar)

And then, the man, who confirmed that the knife was taken out of the bag, held Dolgar’s hand, which was holding the knife...

“What... guhh!?” (Dolgar)

He twisted his wrist and pierced the knife into Dolgar’s chest as if he was committing suicide.

He pushed the hand faster than Dolgar’s reaction, and the man got away from Dolgar when the blade of the knife was half-buried.

“Gaahh... you be-betray—...” (Dolgar)

“I<sup>(1)</sup> don’t remember being on your side.” (??)

“Wha!? You, why are you... here?” (Dolgar)

As I replied, I removed my mask and exposed my true face, and Dolgar had a startled expression.<sup>(2)</sup>

“I thought that you might have a backup plan, and it is as I expected.” (Sirius)

He was supposed to continue pretending being broken in the punishment chamber, and escape by the guidance of those whom he hired in preparation for something. By the way, the man that was hired was originally a thug from the Underworld, and it was a person who had nothing to do with Mira’s Doctrine.

I noticed the reaction of an intruder through [Search] and started moving at the same

time. I made him lose consciousness, and changed places before appearing before Dolgar. The real person was tied up and thrown into another punishment chamber.

“A-ahhh... you...” (Dogar)

“I would not have done this if you hadn’t thought about getting revenge, and quietly moved to another continent.” (Sirius)

The reason why I changed places and expressively took him outside, was to listen to his real intentions. There were other reasons, but this was the only one for Dolgar.

I stabbed him without hesitation after listening to his real intentions, which I had expected; but if he hadn’t thought about revenge, I would have made him lose consciousness, and returned him to the punishment chamber.

Dolgar might have escaped if I didn’t change places and didn’t do anything, but actually, it wasn’t like that.

The other reason why I aimed for Dolgar was...

“...How about coming out?” (Sirius)

“...When did you notice?” (??)

Because it wasn’t just me.

The one that appeared from a tree nearby was the attendant of the Pope, the former Holy Knight Jii-san. He wasn’t dressed like an adventurer, like he was during the daytime; instead, he was dressed in an attire that was almost completely black, which could easily blend in the dark night.

Yeah... even if I didn’t do anything, even if I turned a blind eye, this Jii-san would probably deal with Dolgar.

“Well, you continuously followed me from the temple. It was a splendid tailing, since your presence often disappeared.” (Sirius)

“You noticed until that point, huh? You, too. The ability to bring Dolgar this far in this short amount of time is praiseworthy.” (Former Holy Knight)

“Thank you very much. Leaving that matter aside, are you going to arrest me because I took this man out?” (Sirius)

“I guess so. On that standpoint, I should arrest you, but... I have another job right now.” (Former Holy Knight)

As the Jii-san said so, he was walking towards Dolgar, who was struggling to pull out the knife stuck in his chest, and looked into his face.

“Aahh... guuhh... H-help me! That man tried to kill me...” (Dolgar)

“Hmm, I have confirmed that you are stabbing the knife into yourself.” (Former Holy Knight)

“What... did... you... say...?” (Dolgar)

“Did you choose to kill yourself because of the guilt? I heard that your heart was broken in the punishment chamber, so this is a possible ending.” (Former Holy Knight)

“Guhuh... don’t make fun of me, bastard!” (Dolgar)

Dolgar was furious while vomiting blood from his mouth, but the Jii-san indifferently looked down on him.

“Fun? Do you think that you can live after doing those things until such an extent? Besides, I must pluck the sprout of revenge early.” (Former Holy Knight)

“That’s... not... it...” (Dolgar)

“Whomever becomes the enemy of the Pope... I will eliminate them.” (Former Holy Knight)

And then, when the Jii-san pushed the knife with his palm, as if to hit him, the blade easily penetrated Dolgar’s heart.

Even if Dolgar extended his hand for help, he fell down onto the ground with his hand reaching out towards the sky, and never moved again.

After the Jii-san confirmed the death of Dolgar, he turned his eyes with vigilance towards me, but since I couldn’t feel any bloodlust, I didn’t think that he was planning

to fight.

“Now... I would like to say that next is your turn, but Dolgar will be found like this in the punishment chamber. However, your crime of deliberately taking him out is still there.” (Former Holy Knight)

“Hmm, is it possible for him to be found like this in the punishment chamber?” (Sirius)

Dolgar, who was put in the punishment chamber, was broken by the feeling of guilt and he didn't eat enough.

A man came to help him without anyone realizing it. He handed over a bag with food and Dolgar killed himself with a knife, which was put inside the bag.

By chance, the Jii-san came to look at his condition, and he knocked the intruder unconscious while confirming that Dolgar was killed in the punishment chamber... that was probably what he would say.

The Jii-san nodded with a bitter smile at the scenario I mentioned.

“Heh... did you induce him to do that so it would be like this? You are very attentive... you even targeted the moment he grabbed the knife.” (Former Holy Knight)

“There is also my insistence, but when someone's being killed, not only the image of Mira's Doctrine, won't the Pope and Ashley feel sad?” (Sirius)

“You understand that well. I was also wondering about how to get rid of him, but let's say that this could save me the work for the time being.” (Former Holy Knight)

In order to make this to be seen as a suicide, it was good enough if I stabbed the knife while making him hold it after he died.

However, since there was also a method of making the target commit suicide in my previous life, I copied that method... well, my insistence came out for a bit.

“It's just that... it wasn't necessary to bring him here, to such a place. If there is a reason, I would like to hear it.” (Former Holy Knight)

“By letting Dolgar escape from the temple, I could hear Dolgar's real intentions when he was off-guard, and I also wanted to know your ability.” (Sirius)



“My ability?” (Former Holy Knight)

“Yes. I was convinced that I could see the other side of you from your ability and appearance. It might be unpleasant when someone young says that, but...” (Sirius)

From the fact that he was traveling alone with the Pope, who didn't have fighting capabilities, I thought that his skill was sufficient.

I kept losing sight of him many times along the way. And from his calm demeanor, even though he was a former ally of Dolgar, I understood that even if this Jii-san was from the 'other side', he had considerable abilities.

The figure that didn't mind doing the dirty work for the Pope more than anything was probably the ideal image of Chris protecting Ashley.

As a Senior of the Holy Knights, which Chris aimed for from now on, I thought that he would be a better Shishou than me. Since the eyes that saw not only the Pope but also the Cardinal and Ashley were gentle, there was no problem with his personality.

That's why I...

“If it is you, I feel relieved to leave him in your care. Please take care of Chris.” (Sirius)

I deeply bowed, and entrusted Chris to the Jii-san.

Since Chris had decided this on his own, I suppose that this was incongruous to say such a thing.

If I had to say this, it was probably a bit too much to regard us as teacher and student, since the relationship between Chris and I was short.

“I see... so you were called 'Sensei' by Chris?” (Former Holy Knight)

Although it was short, Chris called me 'Sensei' and yearned for me. Even when I wasn't there, he kept training and upheld my teachings.

I responded to such a Chris by giving him training for a short time, but since he had found a new goal and Shishou, this would be as far as I go as his Sensei.

That was why, even if he thought that I was Chris' Sensei until the end, I wanted to

properly tell, in words, the entrusted party.

When I raised my head after conveying those words, the old man was looking at my eyes with a serious face.

“...What are you? When I think whether you are a greenhorn adventurer, you seem to have a calmness and ability that don’t correspond with your age. To me, you already look like a farsighted middle-aged man.” (Former Holy Knight)

“That has been often said to me. Although I am just living a peculiar life, I am just an adventurer who aims to be an educator.” (Sirius)

I didn’t think that he would believe it, but it couldn’t be helped, since that was a fact. Regardless of the memories of my previous life, I was an individual called ‘Sirius’.

As I expected, whether the old man was suspicious, the confrontation between him and I continued awhile, and a stalemate situation, like reaching out to our weapons, continued several times.

When I was thinking that it would be easier to have a battle at least once... the Jii-san let go of his vigilance, after lightly breathing out, and deeply nodded.

“...Understood. I will be responsible for bringing Chris up, and I will make him a fine Holy Knight to protect Ashley. Even if you didn’t tell me, that was what I planned to do from the beginning.” (Former Holy Knight)

“Thank you very much. And since Chris already has no family, I would like you to be like his parent.” (Sirius)

“Hmmm. My wife and I weren’t blessed with a child. Since I think that I am getting a new child after Ashley, you can be rest assured.” (Former Holy Knight)

Later on, the fact about the Jii-san’s family was known, and apparently, the Cardinal was his wife. To add it further, it seemed that she was the Pope’s sister. It’s probably justifiable that he clearly wanted to deal with Dolgar, after what happened with his wife.

And the Jii-san wasn’t only a brother-in-law, he also completely longed for the Pope and pledged allegiance to him. It was a considerably complex family, but as for me, I wasn’t worried about betrayal.

“Well then, let’s go back. It will be troublesome if another believer notices that Dolgar is not there.” (Former Holy Knight)

“Aah, sure.” (Sirius)

I wrapped Dolgar’s body with the blanket I brought, but when I tried to carry him like baggage, the old man stretched out his hand from the side and took him from me.

“Let me carry him. He was originally a believer of Mira’s Doctrine.” (Former Holy Knight)

“Thank you very much.” (Sirius)

“No need to say thanks. More importantly, you don’t have to be that polite. You should speak normally.” (Former Holy Knight)

“I am way younger than you, to be like that...” (Sirius)

“I am not a fool who judges by age or appearance. I don’t want to be spoken with such politeness by a strong man who completely read my movements.” (Sirius)

Although the standoff earlier was seen as nothing but glaring from a bystander’s view, an advanced battle was unfolding while we were guessing each other’s abilities. Since an initial response was key when one’s own abilities reached a certain level, it would be a battle between experts.

In this case, since I had an opportunity to observe the Jii-san, who stopped to stab Dolgar, it wasn’t difficult to guess his secret.

By guessing his secret, I could seal his movements before he even tried to take an initial response.

“Goodness, it is my first time having all my initial responses blocked. The world is wide, isn’t it?” (Former Holy Knight)

Since he held a flexible mind that allowed him to accept his own defeat, regardless of age difference, I thought that I could entrust Chris to this person.

We finished all our errands in this way, and we left the place in the dark night.

Although it was already in the late night, it was suspicious when we carried Dolgar's dead body.

If we tried to enter the town as we were, we would definitely be stopped by the gate guard. By going through a secret passage that the Jii-san knew, we could enter the town with innocent looks.

Proceeding through the same alley as when I got out, we came back to the temple without being found by anyone, and we decided to split up before reaching the punishment chamber.

"The incident this time would have gotten dangerous if it wasn't for you guys. I thought that I was going to be busy with unnecessary blood spills by sweeping and killing the people involved, but you saved me a lot for this to end peacefully. The matter of Dolgar has been taken care of, and I really appreciate your help." (Former Holy Knight)

"You don't have to mind it that much. I only acted in retaliation, since my disciple was kidnapped." (Sirius)

"Oh, well. Since the Pope and Ashley have expressed their gratitudes, I am not going to say anything more. Well then... it's my job after this. You can take a rest." (Former Holy Knight)

"Yeah. Do your best." (Sirius)

"Heh... that's for sure." (Former Holy Knight)

Since it was his decision, sorry for saying something boorish.

Finally, after seeing a gentle smile on the Jii-san's face, I went back to my room.



It was during the next morning that the news about Dolgar killing himself in the punishment chamber spread.

It was roughly as I expected, but the difference was that the man who I changed places with encountered Jii-san, and since he was swept up, I guessed that things had been taken care of, right?

He was the perpetrator of the incident involving Mira's Doctrine, so the majority of believers reacted as if it was justified, but there were a lot who took pride of the teachings, and thought that it might have been his salvation.

As expected, the Pope and Ashley were sad when they knew the fact, but the Jii-san told them that when Dolgar was thinking of Mira-sama, he could no longer bear his guilty conscience.

"Really? Even though he was drowning in greed... his mind really was thinking of Mira-sama..." (Ashley)

"Yes, Dolgar was just a bit off the right track. Let's keep on learning from this tragedy to prevent such a thing from happening again." (Pope)

"If Ashley is depressed, won't other believers become uneasy? I will always support you from the back, so let's move forward." (Chris)

"...Yeah... you're right. As a Saintess, I must be firm." (Ashley)

It seemed that Chris was supporting Ashley as her Senior.

Unlike the Pope and the Jii-san, they were man and woman, so they would probably have a lot of difficulties.

However, it was up to them to clear their own way from now on. It was a mutual love, and I hoped that they both could find their own way and grow up.



Since the Pope had returned, Mira's Doctrine would be alright. And since Chris had found a new Shishou, there was almost no reason for me to be here.

I decided to start the trip soon, so, together with my disciples, we visited Chris and Ashley and told them that we would leave Fonia.

"You are going to leave already!? We haven't returned the favor for helping us." (Ashley)

"We have been allowed to see the Ceremony and you have taken care of us during our stay. Besides, we are adventurers. We will come again when Chris has become a

splendid Holy Knight.” (Sirius)

“Sensei...” (Chris)

While Ashley was looking lonely, Chris looked sadder, and looked like he was about to cry at any time.

“Don’t make such a face. From now on, look at that person as your Shishou, and get stronger.” (Sirius)

“Yeah... right. But, the fact that Sirius-san is my Sensei will never change. Who decided that I should only give my respects to only one person?” (Chris)

“Aren’t you going to say something?” (Sirius)

At that time, Chris declared that he would become the junior of the Jii-san and become a Holy Knight, he apologized with a momentum that could pave a way for me.

Although he did it with a momentum, he noticed that he was being rude when I said that he would train under Jii-san and disregard me as his Sensei.

It was certainly rude to decide without discussing it, but there seemed to be no problems with the attitude of Ashley and Jii-san. More than anything... without being forced by anyone, I would not oppose if Chris chose his own path.

That’s why I didn’t mind about it... and I pushed his back.

After that, Chris gradually regained his mood after I talked with the Jii-san several times, and there was also a gift, which I was told was a common courtesy.

That’s right, if he had time to feel troubled or feel guilty, he better get stronger.

Since I was more than happy if he showed me a grown appearance.



Two days later, we were gathering in front of the temple before leaving Fonia.

After the preparations for the trip were finished, all we had to do was to bid farewell, but... there were many people gathered in front of the temple, including believers and

people in the town.

Of course, the Pope and the Cardinal were there, and some people were coming because the Saintess was also there, but there were also some coming purely for us.

There were those who became our friends when we were helping rebuild the buildings burned by Vagle, those who adored Reese for treating the injured, and some beastkin also came to worship Hokuto.

“For ordinary travelers to gather this many people...” (Sirius)

“That is a proof that people longed for you all. Please... come again.” (Ashley)

“We still haven’t return the favor, alright? We will give you a big welcome when you visit next time.” (Pope)

“Yes, I’m looking forward to that.” (Sirius)

After Ashley and Pope, we shook hands and said goodbye to the others, and on the side, Chris was surrounded by my disciples.

“You are also Sirius-sama’s disciple, and you received training from him. I think that there will be many things from now on, but please try not to shame yourself.” (Emilia)

“If you’re going to be a Holy Knight, I will be the second strongest. Work hard!” (Reus)

“You must not overdo it. Do not make Ashley-chan cry.” (Reese)

“When I think about it, you are my Senpai in regards of being Sirius’ disciple. Work hard so that you don’t show a bad part to your junior.” (Fia)

“Everyone... thank you.” (Chris)

While tears were floating at the edge of the eyes, Chris was receiving encouragement from his Senpais, one after another.

Lastly, Chris came to me. He then looked at me after deeply bowing.

“...I’ll do my best!” (Chris)

“Aah, do it like you have no regrets.” (Sirius)

Since I have told the matter that needed to be told, there was no need to speak any longer.

When I extended my hand, Chris firmly grasped it.

“...” (Sirius)

“...” (Former Holy Knight)

And when I looked at the Jii-san who stood by the Pope, I made a smile when he nodded as if to say to leave things to him.

As the farewell ended in this way, we got on our carriage and set out.



The carriage moved until the figures of Ashley and Chris, who kept waving their hands, were no longer seen. I let out a small breath after we got outside the town.

It was only a few days, but fighting a magician who could see Spirits, and pretending to be the Messenger of God... I thought that they were considerably packed days.

When I sat on the coach, while indulging in such a thought, Emilia offered some tea and sat next to me.

“Here you go, Sirius-sama. It is rare for you to be absent-minded. Is there something wrong?” (Emilia)

“No. It’s just a noisy stay that was more than I expected...” (Sirius)

“I see. It was certainly intense, but we gained a lot of things.” (Emilia)

“Yeah. We gained valuable experiences, and more than anything, Reese grew up in a big way.” (Sirius)

When I looked back, Reese, who was sitting at the back of the carriage while leisurely enjoying the scenery, noticed our gazes and turned her face around.



“Hmm? what is it?” (Reese)

“No, we’re talking about how Reese has grown up. By the way... are they still following you?” (Sirius)

“Well... yes. Even if we have gone outside the town, they are still following me.” (Reese)

Earlier, when my disciples passed through the sanctuary to infiltrate the temple of Mira’s Doctrine, Reese told me that because there were Water Spirits from the sanctuary’s lake that wanted to follow her, it seemed that there were several of them that came along.

Although it seemed like a normal story, for Reese and Fia, who lived together with Spirits, they thought that this was quite abnormal.

Depending on the situation of the place, a Spirit was basically an uncontrolled and whimsical existence which didn’t stay in one place.

Spirit Magic was a request for cooperation from nearby Spirits and they would lend a hand, even if there was some distance, but it seemed that there were none that followed them everywhere like the ones with Reese.

As the Spirits came like puppies chasing after their owner, thanks to them, it didn’t only make it easier for Reese to cast spells, it also made the invocation become much faster.

Since they were Water Spirits from the sanctuary, I thought that they would go home after we left the town, but... the result was what Reese had said.

“Say, will it be alright if you guys don’t go home? Your favorite place is over there, isn’t it?” (Reese)

“If they have followed until here, why don’t you let them do whatever they like? After all, Reese is not the only person adored by the Spirits.” (Sirius)

“Why don’t you also imitate that, Fia-ane?” (Reus)

“I understood when comparing them to Reese, but it looks like the attribute of the Spirits are different. The Wind Spirits are everywhere and they will lend their strength, but because they are whimsical and don’t like to be bond, they won’t follow.”

(Fia)

Apparently, she tried a couple of times, but the Wind Spirits didn't follow like what was presently happening with Reese.

Based on the incident this time, there were significant differences based on the attribute of the Spirits, and since a strong point could also become a weakness, they understood that overconfidence was no good.

However, I knew a bad example, which was Vagle, so those two, who were my family and my lovers, were going to be alright. To begin with, I wouldn't let them be.

Let's try not to neglect a small amount of information exchange if there was something we could do as countermeasures.



As a side story, while staying in Fonia, I had been guided once to the sanctuary of Mira's Doctrine.

It was a very divine place, but when I looked around with [Search], I instinctively put myself on guard because there was an enormous mana that I felt from the lake.

I didn't feel like a bad presence, but I was certain that within that lake... it was where Mira was lurking.

And since that lake contained a dense amount of mana, if one fell inside, the dense mana would erode the body, and it would result in death when it went beyond a tolerable range.

Anyway, I told my disciples and Ashley not to get too close to the lake, so that they wouldn't fall into it.



The carriage departed from Fonia and continued on the main road, before we reached a fork in the road.

We stopped the carriage for a break, and when I checked the place on the map, Reus,

who was ready to run for training, came in front of me.

“Aniki, which way are we going?” (Reus)

“It’s going to be... East. We will go to a town that’s several days from here.” (Sirius)

Since this was a sightseeing trip, we were going to go around the whole continent, but... it wasn’t a rushed trip.

I won’t use any shortcuts more than necessary, and I would slowly go through the main roads.

After the break, we broke into running groups for training and got on the carriage. And then, we started moving.

“Well then, shall we start? If there is something, report immediately.” (Sirius)

“““Yes.””” (Emilia/Reese/Reus)

“Yes, I’ll be careful.” (Fia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

As the carriage advanced while receiving the calm sunshine and wind, our trip continued...



— Ashley —

Several days have passed after Sirius-sama and the others took off.

Since the return of the Pope, I also became able to concentrate on my duties. I was working hard every day, while aiming to be a splendid Saintess.

But I thought that Chris-kun was the one who was working harder than me.

Although Ojii-chan wasn’t my real family, he was a Jii-san that I could depend on, and Chris-kun was being forged with ways to fight and attitude by the former Holy Knight.

Because of that, it was lonely when Chris wasn't next to me, but when he collapsed, Ojii-chan called me to nurse him. I was sorry for Chris-kun, but I was glad that I could be near him, even if I had to nurse him.



“How about these, Saintess-sama? They are the goods from the Galgan Company, they are products that satisfy everyone.” (??)

“Hmm... well...” (Ashley)

On one day, Chris-kun's benefactor, a merchant called Gadd-san, came to the temple, and asked me this.

To discover new products, it seemed that he was looking around to decide whether to build a branch store, and he came to the temple to discuss with the 'face' of the town, Mira's Doctrine.

I tried to apologize, since I snatched Chris-kun from him, and I told him that it was impossible, while asking for Chris-kun to be present during the negotiations.

Even though I apologized, I was confused because Gadd-san kept talking without minding my feelings, and then... Chris-kun, who didn't know that Gadd-san was in the room because he was training, entered the room.

“Ashley. The training is over, so...” (Chris)

“Is that you, Chris?” (Gadd)

“...Gadd-san.” (Chris)

They were solidified for a while, and Chris-kun, in particular, was completely 'shrinking'...

“Excellent. If it is you, you'll understand the merit of the store's products, right? If you are free, please help us negotiate.” (Gadd)

“Eh?” (Chris)

The smiling Gadd-san overbearingly asked Chris-kun to sit down. He, then, brought

out some products and handed them over.

“What’s wrong? Whether these goods are necessary for the temple, you would understand, since you have experience with my store.” (Gadd)

“But I... betrayed Gadd-san...” (Chris)

“I said ‘Get out’, but I didn’t said anything about being betrayed. Whatever the reason is, if you are here, it seems that it was a smooth negotiation. Hey, tell everyone the truth about the good quality of our store’s products.” (Gadd)

Gadd-san kept talking to Chris-kun with a face of a merchant, even when Chris-kun was confused.

“By the way, have you become a believer of Mira’s Doctrine?” (Gadd)

“I-I am not a believer, I am training to become a Holy Knight.” (Chris)

“Hoo, it looks like it is a high-level position. With this, it can be a good connection then.” (Gadd)

“Hmm... I’m not sure if it can be done, and that is...” (Chris)

“Are you a fool? Isn’t that concluded because it has the right quality? And you know that our products are not low-quality merchandise that would make you feel guilty when it is bought, right!?” (Gadd) (Recheck)

“That has... been already ingrained in this body.” (Chris)

“If it is so, then act on it. This is a magic tool that will help you during the hot season...” (Gadd)

“Yes! This is a magic tool that develops wind with a small amount of mana, but I think that it will be more useful for drying washed clothes.” (Chris)

He said that the connection could be done, but I felt the kindness of a parent from the eyes that instructed Chris to explain about the item.

Gadd-san wasn’t really angry. He seemed rather pleased with Chris’ growth.

I had taken Chris-kun away from such a big-hearted person.

But... now I need Chris-kun.

That was why I would like to say to Gadd-san, who guided my precious person, not only an apology, but also words of gratitude.

“Hmmm... Gadd-san.” (Ashley)

“Yes? What is it, Saintess-sama?” (Gadd)

“It is about Chris-kun... I wanted to say sorry. And thank you very much.” (Ashley)

“...That is what he decided for himself. There is no need for Saintess-sama to say such things.” (Gadd)

Even so... Thank you very much.” (Ashley)

“Yes, I will entrust this child to you.” (Gadd)

I deeply lowered my head to Gadd, who replied with a smile.



After that, the negotiations continued for a while, and it turned into small talk when it was concluded.

It seemed that small talk was also necessary for a merchant, but now I just wanted to know their circumstances, and I was relieved after getting to know about them.

“You were really lucky... since you coincidentally met Danna.” (Gadd)

“Yes, we were safe because we met Sensei.” (Chris)

“Besides, Mira-sama and the advent of the Messenger... this is truly a town where God has descended. If the rumor spreads, many people are likely to gather, and it is likely to be the seed of business.” (Gadd)

“You are still the same, Gadd-san.” (Chris)

“I am a merchant, after all. Come to think of it, Danna was also involved in various things, right? Unexpectedly, the real identity of the Messenger was Danna, isn’t it? If it was Danna, it won’t go beyond common sense if he caused such a commotion, right?” (Gadd)

“Eh!? That is...” (Chris)

Chris was started to get panic when I heard that Messenger-sama was Sirius-sama, but I...

“You’re right, if it is that person, it wouldn’t be strange to call him the Messenger.” (Ashley)

“Ooh, it looks like Saintess-sama understands the splendor of Danna! I am also able to make a profit thanks to Danna, and I am forever in his debt, hahaha!” (Gadd)

“A-Ashley. You...” (Chris)

“Hehe... that’s a secret.” (Ashley)

I was overwhelmed by the intimidation unleashed as soon as he descended, but while seeing the figure who was very strict when asking questions... I remembered the scolding when I first met Sirius-sama.

The kindness that I felt within the strictness, and it was because I was completely covered with his presence.

I didn’t confirm it, and I didn’t dare to open my mouth at that time.

When I settled down, I thought that it was terrible to arbitrarily pretend to be the Messenger of Mira-sama, but fortunately, rather than blaming him, Mira-sama didn’t say anything at all. However, since I felt that Mira-sama was gently smiling, I thought that She surely recognized him.

When I thought that... my heart naturally calmed down, so I decided to think that Sirius-sama was a real Messenger-sama.

Besides, it wasn’t just me and Chris-kun, the figure that guided and watched over Emilia-san and Reese-san was fit to be called ‘Messenger-sama’.

Therefore, I prayed.

May the trip of Messenger-sama be a path of happiness.

And may Mira-sama blessed them...



## Extra

NG Scene ✕It is largely different from the characters in the story.

After Ashley and the Pope, we shook hands and said goodbye to the others, and on the side, Chris was surrounded by my disciples.

“Eh, you only have this much?” (Emilia)

“Hehehe, my partner wants to have a sip of blood!” (Reus)

“There is nothing that you don’t have, right? Come, please fly!” (Fia)

“Oh, what is that sound now? Show me what’s in your pocket.” (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto) (Translation... If you don’t do it quickly, my forefoot will roar.)

“If-if this is a-a dream, let me wake up soon!” (Chris)



## Hokuto’s Teachings

✕It is not a Kanji conversion mistake. Since this is an extra, it has nothing to do with the main story. (Author)<sup>(3)</sup>

Just before leaving Fonia, Hokuto loudly howled towards the beastkin who worshipped Hundred Wolves.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)



""""Yes."""" (??)

"...Reus. I have a bad feeling, so will you translate Hokuto's words?" (Sirius)

"Uhhh... 'From now on, for the sake of protecting the town which my Master'... I mean Aniki 'is involved in, you need to work hard'..." (Reus)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

""""Understood, Hundred Wolves-sama!"""" (??)

"If I am your God, Aniki is even a better God. When I see you next time, instead of me—'..." (Reus)

"Hey, Hokuto!" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

""""Hundred Wolves-sama!"""" (??)

"Hmm... 'I think that is the right thing to do! So, please forgive me'... eh, Aniki!? Hokuto-san!? Are you playing tag!? Let me join too!" (Reus)

There was only one thing in Hokuto's Teachings (temporary).

It was for the sake of his Master.

Even if he was being chased by his Master (+ junior), he wouldn't stop moving for the sake of his Master.

# Intermission

## The G and The Cake Master

— Lior —

That day, I came to the arena in Elysion's school.

Because after this, it would be to kill each other... not that, I was swinging my sword in the waiting room of the arena, since we were held back before the match.

"Hmmm... this is a good ending." (Lior)

As I grasped the partner that I received from that short-legged old man and confirmed the feel, it was more familiar than I expected. Although he was stubborn and obstinate, I admit that he had skills and he could do it.

As I was pleased with the feel of my partner after a long time, the door of the waiting room was opened.

"Tousen-sama. The arrangements have been prepared, so please go ahead to the ring."  
(??)

When I turned around to the voice that called me, a woman who looked like an attendant with rabbit ears stood.

This woman was someone whom I taught how to use a sword. She was Lifell-chan's attendant.

I noticed her beforehand, but the way she hid her presence was quite good. As expected of an exclusive attendant of Jou-chan.

"Hmm, I'm going." (Lior)

I was led to the ring by the guidance of that attendant, but I had been here many times to train Jou-chan to be a soldier.

Well, the attendant didn't open her mouth in the beginning, but then, she looked back with a bitter smile.

"It's dangerous to take my eyes off isn't it, Tousen-sama?" (Senia)

"There is no such a thing. Hoo... that light, it wasn't there before, but for some reason, it makes me want to slice that magic tool. Can I cut it?" (Lior)

"You said that as soon as you can... huh? This is the latest magic tool that Rodwell-sama made, so if you slice it, your dinner will be cut." (Senia)

"By no means, it's not that I want to cut it. But, if that reduces the amount of meals, I have to give that up, I guess?" (Lior)

They understood my behavior, but... oh well.

Later, when I came to the field while passing through some things that I felt like cutting, a big cheer welcomed me.

Hmmm, I won the championship several times for that... I forgot the name, but I remember the tournament which I fought and won.

While thinking that the number of spectators was far less compared to that, I continued walking as I was seen off by the guiding attendant. There was the Elf that was called Magic-something in the middle of a rather large ring.

As usual, that calm face that seemed to know everything was annoying.

"You have come. It looks like you finally got your original weapon back, but are you really going to fight me with that sword alone?" (Rodwell)

"This is my only weapon. I will have no excuse if I am defeated by you due to lack of preparation." (Lior)

"Yes, I understand. Well then... shall we begin?" (Rodwell)

"Hmmm. About your magic... you should know it won't connect before my sword!" (Lior)

As I held my partner, he kept waiting for the signal to start the match while focusing

mana.

The audience seats seemed to be protected by some defensive walls made by the magic formation of that guy, but it was doubtful whether it could stop our attacks.

Well, the reckless crowds were told that it was dangerous beforehand, but they still came and sit to watch it.

Speaking of those I knew among them, there were Lifell-chan and that attendant, the young man who trained by fighting me several times. Other than them, I also saw soldiers who served the castle here and there.

And then, that guy's disciple, a youngster who seemed like he didn't train enough, stood up while spreading his voice with Wind Magic. He, then, shot a spear of flame into the sky.

[I think that it is pointless to say anything, but please don't overdo it. Match... Start!]  
(Magna)

"I'm going, [Multi-Elemental]." (Rodwell)

When that guy grandly waved his hands as the match started, countless flames, masses of rocks, wind and water balls appeared in the air and were unleashed one after another.

It was a troublesome number to count, but there was one thing I could do.

"Nuoooo!" (Lior)

It was nothing but break through from the front.

Of course, there were various incoming spells, but I was just moving forward while chopping all of it with my partner.

I could say that there was nothing I could do but that.

"Oh dear, you are the same monster as ever!" (Rodwell)

"No matter how many spells you throw, they're just slow to the point of making me yawn!" (Lior)

Knowing the speed of Sirius, I've been forging my skills to hit such a guy with my sword. So, it couldn't be helped that the magic looked slow.

Besides, I probably slashed all of them if they were approaching from the front, but now I didn't waste time by only hitting the ones that were going to directly hit me. I also learned this when I fought that guy.

"You're obviously different than before... for you to be still improving with your age, what a terrible existence!" (Rodwell)

"What's wrong? Your seriousness is not at this level, right!?" (Lior)

"Of course! [Create]" (Rodwell)

"Muu!?" (Lior)

When that guy strongly trampled the ground's surface while I was slicing the incoming fireballs, I suddenly had a big hole at my feet and I fell into it.

The landing was easy because it wasn't deep enough but there were countless spears of earth at the bottom of the hole.

I would be skewered if I landed just like that...

"How shallow!" (Lior)

Swinging my partner at the bottom of the hole, I blew away all of the spears of earth by the shock unleashed from the sword.

I safely landed right at the bottom of the hole and when I looked up overhead to leave the hole...

"I haven't finished yet! Well, how are you going to run away from this?" (Rodwell)

There was a huge rock that seemed to comfortably fit into the hole that I had fallen in. In terms of size, it should be several times my own size.

However... that was great! He was brimming with the intention of killing me!

This feeling of tension would make me grow stronger!

Alright, then...

“That’s still easy! Nuoooo—!” (Lior)

I applied [Boost], and then, I kicked the ground and flew towards the incoming rock while unleashing a huge swing.

Next, I swung my partner twice and the rock was divided into four. I kicked one of them and moved in midair. Furthermore, I also managed to escape from the pitfall.

When I confirmed after the landing, he had moved away as I was falling in the hole and the short distance between us became long again.

Oh well, that was fine. That was a natural course of action, since it would be deadly for him, who used magic, to get closer.

“I intended to drop quite a sturdy rock, but you cut it after all, huh?” (Rodwell)

“No matter how hard it is, it’s just a rock. There is nothing I can’t cut with my [Single Strike Ultimate Destruction Sword Style]!” (Lior)

“A joke, huh... after all, it’s not possible for you to say that. As I expected, I am no good with a war of attrition, so I will conclude this in one go.” (Rodwell)

An enormous amount of mana was spread out when he released the stone that he took out from his pocket onto the ground, and dozens of iron golems were created at the same time around me.

That stone... it was probably a magic stone. But why did he not directly cast it?

“You are certainly strong, but you have only one sword, after all. Accordingly, if I attack you with numbers rather than quality, they will stop your feet, even if I can’t win—...” (Rodwell)

“Arrghh!” (Lior)

“Listen to the talk! I am pointing out your weakness!” (Rodwell)

I didn’t care about such a thing.

No matter what kind of tricks the enemies were using, or cowardly enemies who took a hostage, I would accept them with a single sword swing from the front.

Because of that, when I ignored the talk and mowed the golems down, he let a sigh as if giving up and started a long chant.

Hou... was that the reason why he used the magic stone?

For a person at his level to chant, he was probably planning to unleash a huge magic.

It would be interesting to receive it, but what we were doing was having a match. I would slice him before the chanting ended!

[Headmaster! Tousen-sama! This is a match, so please be careful not to overdo it!]  
(Magna)

“Say that again!” (Lior)

I heard a voice that seemed to be his disciple... a match? What was that?

Since that guy intended to kill me, I would also do as I pleased.

As I swung away the incoming golems...

“What a rude guy!” (Rodwell)

He kept moving while chanting, and the golems also kept a certain distance while surrounding me, so I had to deal with them, one by one.

If they attacked me all at once, I could slaughter them as a whole, but... was the golems' role to hold me back until the end? I was angry, but it was a considerably proper method to use golems.

“These are not enough to stop me!” (Lior)

Although I tried to blow the golems to where he would be by using [Break Thrust], he wasn't there because he was kept moving.

Nevertheless, I still got a way. I chased after him, while ignoring the other golems, and thrust myself from the side of a golem where he hid in the rear.

“Are you planning to hid here? Muu—!?” (Lior)

However, since my sword was going to cut the golem, I was also going to cut him along with it.

When I tried to verify that, since I didn’t feel that I had cut a person, a golem that had the same size as him was cut in half, and rolled over.

As I slashed the attacking golems while checking the surroundings, the number of golems that had the same size as him had also multiplied.

“That’s annoying. I am caught by a cheap trick.” (Lior)

It seems that I was too excited to think that I had sliced him.

It was annoying to tell them apart anymore. Since he would finish chanting soon, I gave up breaking his magic and focused on crushing the golems.

I had a hunch, but I didn’t feel like I could crush his works.

After I slashed all the golems standing around, he appeared from the remains of the golems that were a little ways away.

He was amazed, but compared to his usual calm face, this was far better.

“...You really are living only by instinct.” (Rodwell)

“Your chanting has finally ended, huh? Where is it? Are you expecting me to wait for it?” (Lior)

“Yes, I was wondering what to do, but when I considered what would you do, I decided on this.” (Rodwell)

As he pointed to the sky while saying so, a huge rock fell down from the sky.

It was as big as the rock that I cut earlier. Although it looked completely like a mountain... I had seen this before.

A long time ago, when I hunted bandits before I secluded myself, it was a spell that was unleashed towards the bandits together with me.



I managed to slice it at that time, but the mountains I saw now were getting bigger than before.

“It is my greatest Earth Spell, [Mountain Pressure]. Please don’t think that it will be easy to slash it this time.” (Rodwell)

“You... out of all things, you use this.” (Lior)

“That is the result of you, who moves without thinking about strategies. More importantly, Sirius-kun, who you know, crushed this spell from the front. Well, what are you planning to do with that small sword?” (Rodwell)

My partner was surely smaller compared to that... but I won’t forgive you for saying so.

Not just because of his guts, when he said that Sirius crushed it above all, I would be ashamed of myself if I couldn’t do it either.

“Hahaha! Interesting... I’ll do it!” (Lior)

“Yes. You don’t have to worry because I will properly collect your dead body.” (Rodwell)

“That will be you!” (Lior)

In order to attack the incoming mountain, I took a stance of [Strong Heaven].

“[Single Strike Ultimate Destruction Sword Style]... the basic ultimate single strike...” (Lior)

What I was going to unleash was a trump card I had for Sirius, but... it was still a work-in-progress.

It was powerful, but when it came to Sirius, it was definitely avoidable if I unleashed it in this condition.

Only when I was convinced that I could hit him, the hidden purpose of this technique would come out.

And once I judged that boy to be of equal stand with me... No, let’s not think something

unnecessary.

Now, the mountain was in front of me, so let's focus on distorting the face of that annoying Elf.

"Ooooo—!" (Lior)



— Lifell —

If I had to tell the situation at that time in words... there would be nothing coming out.

Of course, various sounds reverberated at the ring as the mountain fell, but when Lior-san unleashed the blow... the sound momentarily disappeared.

If I had to explain in detail of what I saw, when the falling mountain touched the surface of the ground, I thought that Lior-san was instantly blurred, and the mountain was cut into two was a complete joke.

"What on earth... is that technique?" (Lifell)

"...I don't know. This is my first time to see that technique." (Melt)

Melt, who had been tempered every day by fighting Lior many times, also hadn't seen that technique.

I looked at Senia, who stood before me, but she also didn't understand and shook her head.

"From my eyes, I saw nothing but Lior-sama simply swinging down his sword." (Senia)

"Well, when you noticed it, it was after the swing had already ended." (Lifell)

"Maybe... he just merely swung the sword down. Since that person said that [Single Strike Ultimate Destruction Sword Style] was a style that put everything in the sword and unleashed a single blow, it is to the extreme, but... wasn't that something like what we saw?" (Senia)

"Haa... he is really a monster, isn't he?" (Lifell)

Oji-sama's [Mountain Pressure] was first done from the front by Sirius-kun, so this would be the second?

As I sighed due to different aspects of the battles, the mountain that became two dropped onto the ground, and the ring greatly swayed.

The shock waves caused by the falling and scattered rocks were hitting the defensive wall surrounding the ring, but it seemed to have somehow endured without breaking.

Some members of the audience ran away before the mountain fell, but I didn't need to escape because not only Senia and Melt, Magna-san was also protecting me. It would be pointless to escape if these three people couldn't handle the assault.

"The name of Strongest is not just for a show, right? If you fight that, how do you think you can win?" (Lifell)

It would be best if he didn't become hostile, but Lior-san was an adventurer. Hence, there was a big possibility that he would be hired by enemies. I had to assume the worst.

Senia and Melt started thinking about my question, and Senia opened her mouth first.

"If he is hired, present a better reward and pull him to our side or if he totally becomes hostile, try to hold him back while pulling outside the main camp, and try to destroy his brain in the meantime." (Senia)

"Otherwise... retaliate with similar strength." (Melt)

If it became so, I had Oji-sama on my side.

As I thought, I should pull Sirius-kun, who had won over Lior-san, to my side.

So Reese... be sure to firmly catch him!

Aah... but if Reese became unhappy, it would be an all-out war.

"By the way... I'm not sure if this can be called a match anymore, but I wonder what happened to the results?" (Lifell)

I couldn't see the situation in the ring because of the dust caused by the impact of the

falling mountain.

If it was like the usual, Oji-sama would disperse it by using a Wind spell, but since that didn't happen, could it be...?

"Lifell-hime, I can see movement, even though it is little, but the battle still continues."  
(Senia)

"As expected of Shishou too, it seems that he has gotten closer in the midst of the confusion. Currently, they are colliding in the middle of the ring." (Magna)

As Magna-san touched the floor and used a spell, he seemed to be able to confirm the condition of the ring. As expected of an expert in Earth spells.

Nevertheless, Oji-sama... was fighting an expert in swordsmanship in close combat.

When I thought whether they were alright, since they were fighting each other without reservation, a part of the dust suddenly scattered and two shadows... Oji-sama and Lior-san appeared.

"Nuooo! Bastard! You had such a hidden card!?" (Lior)

"Hehehe! You're not the only one who fought Sirius-kun and grew up!" (Rodwell)

To my surprise, Oji-sama easily avoided Lior-san's stormy sword slashing.

I knew that Oji-sama could do close combat, but the opponent was going all out, unlike when he fought Sirius-kun; so, to begin with, I wonder how Oji-sama could do that?

"That is... he is imitating Sirius-kun's [Boost], you know? However, since it consumes a huge amount of mana, it is impossible to maintain it for a long time, unlike Sirius-kun." (Magna)

Manga-sensei explained further that after using that, it seemed that the whole body would be in pain for a while.

Nevertheless, Oji-sama seemed to avoid the assault with a calm face without expressing the pain, but apparently, he was being considerably driven back at the time of the occasion.

“Aren’t you persistent!? [Air Shotgun]” (Rodwell)

“Nuoo—!?” (Lior)

Oji-sama unleashed the spell used by Emilia and blew Lior-san. As I expected, even if he was Lior-san, it was impossible to slice countless small balls of wind.

Lior-san’s reaction of making his sword into a shield was amazing, but even with the wide sword, it couldn’t protect his whole body. Would it be alright for Oji-sama to use a spell that had the power to crush rocks?

“Ei, it is just itchy! Don’t think that you can defeat me with such an underhanded spell!” (Lior)

Blood was flowing from the arms and legs that couldn’t be defended, but... was that itchy?

The Strongest body was durable, huh?

“This spell wasn’t created by me, it was a spell with good practicality created by a child named Emilia. It is not underhanded.” (Rodwell)

“Wonderful, what a splendid spell! The level is different from the spell that you made. No, leaving that aside, why are you using that spell!? Like I will allow that!” (Lior)

“Why are you getting angry!?” (Rodwell)

As usual, he was infatuated with Emilia.

Although Emilia had, more or less, given the permission herself, Lior-san, who didn’t know that, slashed his sword while being angry from the front... no, it was like that since the beginning.

Anyway, Oji-sama was slightly surprised at Lior-san, who was getting closer while swinging his sword, but he quickly rolled over and calmly invoked some spells.

“There are many things that your sword can’t cut. [Tidal Wave]<sup>(1)</sup>” (Rodwell)

He summoned a huge amount of water that didn’t exist in the field, and it hit like a tsunami. It was the strongest Water spell that Oji-sama could use.

Unlike rocks, the water continuously rushed him, so I didn't think he could do with just a sword, but...

"I'll show you how to cut it!" (Lior)

To attack a large amount of water, Lior-san spread his sword out while defending against it.

Even that person seemed to be clueless with common sense, similar to Sirius-kun.

By the way... when I noticed, the dust was completely cleared by the water Oji-sama produced.

Thanks for letting us see the ring better, but there was something quite different from the earlier scene.

"Lifell-sama... that is..." (Senia)

"Yes, hurry up. Verify the victims." (Lifell)

Lior-san tried to slice the [Tidal Wave] and the terrain where he swung the sword down was beautifully hollowed out. Let alone the seating, the ring itself was sliced.

The terrible scene caused by that sword... there was no way for me to figure out how far it had stretched through the arena. The direction was towards a mountain, and it was very fortunate that it was an area where nobody lived.

I would like to think that... Lior-san was probably convinced that there was nobody there.

After sending Senia to confirm it, there was some new movement in the ring.

"If that's the case, how about Wind this time? [Tempest]" (Rodwell)

"Nuuaahhh—!" (Lior)

Oji-sama released a tornado that could blow even rocks, but Lior-san used his sword to cut it into two.

"Say, Melt. I wonder if you can do that?" (Lifell)

“I would answer ‘impossible’ if this was a long time ago, but the way that person’s fighting now is completely different. Someday... I can surely do it.” (Melt)

“Hehe, you have also grown up.” (Lifell)

“That’s because I want to protect you.” (Melt)

I knew that because you challenged Lior-san every single day, no matter how much he trampled you.

As I put a smile on Melt’s upright expression, Senia came back and informed me about the injured people. Fortunately, there were no deaths. It seemed that several people were mildly injured from the scattered debris.

They shouldn’t have any complaints because they were informed that they should prepare themselves to die.

Well... if I didn’t handle this soon, I had a feeling that those two would keep on fighting.

No, it would probably be bad since Oji-sama’s mana had been completely exhausted. I felt that Lior-san’s stamina was endless.

“Senia. Melt. Get ready.” (Lifell)

““Yes.”” (Senia/Melt)

On my signal, Senia took out a magic tool that could echo voices, and Magna-sensei, who saw Melt running into the arena, was surprised with our behavior.

“Hmm, Lifell-hime. How do you intend to stop the battle between Shishou and that person?” (Magna)

“It’s not really a secret plan. How is it, Senia?” (Lifell)

“Aah... Aahhh— Sorry. Air Shot—...” (Senia)

“That voice is...” (Magna)

It was reasonable that Magna-sensei was surprised.

Senia rarely did this, but one of her special skills was vocal mimicry. It was hard to do it with a man's voice, but there would be no problem with a woman's voice.

The person she imitated was, of course...

"Sirius-sama... please caress me. Will that be alright?" (Senia)

"Yes, that's perfect!" (Lifell)

"Is that Emilia-kun's?" (Magna)

Yes, Lior-san's favorite voice was Emilia's.

If we let the voice echo through the magic tool, Lior-san would surely stopped.

And then, Ojii-sama, who was in the mood...

"Princess-sama, the preparation is completed." (Melt)

"Thank you for waiting. I will surely deliver your order." (??)

I made an arrangement with the Galgan Company to prepare a huge cake.

I didn't remember it well, but it was a huge cake prepared during Reese's marriage ceremony. Sirius-kun called it a Wedding Cake.

After that, I saw Oji-sama and Lior-san take a distance, and Senia-san, who had started the magic tool, took a deep breath.

[Ojii-chan! I prepared a huge cake!] (Senia)

"Emilia!?" (Lior)

"Ooh!? What a splendid cake!" (Rodwell)

The effect was outstanding, and the two turned their faces towards us almost at the same time. It was nothing like a fight, but it was perfect.

Nevertheless... even though he was an old man with such strength, the appearance of having his eyes shining like a child was somewhat irritating.



And then, taking the opportunity where the battle had completely stopped, I called those two with the magic tool presented by Senia.

“Yes, the match is over! If you fight any further, we will be the only ones savoring this cake.” (Lifell)

“What did you say!? Got it, let’s stop right away!” (Rodwell)

“Where is Emilia!? You’re Ojii-chan is here!” (Lior)

“Is that your imagination? Ah, by the way, I have confirmed where Emilia is right now, but I won’t tell you if you fight any more.” (Lifell)

“Nuooo!?” (Lior)

There was a letter sent by Reese the other day, and I saw the name of the city she was staying in.

Lior-san also fixed his sword. He planned to depart in order to chase Sirius-kun and the others, so he would surely want to know where they were.

Lior-san unwillingly gave up his sword because of my dealings.



Thus, the match ended. As I looked at the appearance of those two happily eating the cake while squabbling, I heard the voices of the soldiers cleaning up the rubble nearby.

“Certainly, that Jii-san can even fight this much against the Magic Master.” (Soldier 1)

“My goodness. Nevertheless, it was a fascinating battle. I guess he was playing when he viciously beat us.” (Soldier 2)

“It was truly amazing, but Hime-sama, who stopped that fight, was also amazing.” (Soldier 3)

“You’re right. But, why were those two fighting? Could it be that there was a sudden incoming directive?” (Soldier 4)

I hurriedly gave the order because I thought that it would be good to see a battle

between strong men, but I now thought that they shouldn't know the truth.

The reason of this fight was...

"Wait, you! I was aiming for that part! For you to eat my cake without permission... I will kill you this time!" (Rodwell)

"Bring it on! To get flared up when I ate that part! Fine, I'll kill you!" (Lior)

Yup... it was because Lior-san sneakily ate Oji-sama's cake.

It was silly, but I would also... regret it if I didn't let them have a match.

"Ojii-chan, be nice when eating cake, alright?" (Senia)

"Nuooo!? Will you stop it with that voice! I can't help myself wanting to see her!" (Lior)

"Headmaster, if you make too much noise, I will confiscate the cake. Well, if you do that, I don't mind increasing the amount of dishes." (Magna)

"Magna... you are truly merciless when it comes to sweet things." (Rodwell)

Seeing the cake becoming smaller while being eaten with tremendous vigor, Melt, who was standing next to me, took a breath of relief.

"Since both of them might die as an outcome of the battle, it was very clever to end it with a draw. As expected of Hime-sama." (Melt)

"What are you talking about? If it is about the winner, it is here." (Lifell)

Yup, if there is a winner in this battle... it was me.

Although there were few spectators, if the battle made a commotion that destroyed the arena, rumors would certainly spread. And if the rumors spread, my evaluation would go up if I stopped that battle.

"Well, as I said earlier, the two of you should properly fix the arena. Especially Tousen-san, it's not good if you leave just like that." (Lifell)

"Kuhh... although I didn't break anything..." (Rodwell)

“What is that!?” (Lior)

“If you travel as you please, I will surely tell this to Emilia in a letter.” (Lifell)

“Nuooo!? It-it can’t be helped then. It’s better than having Emilia making cold eyes towards me...” (Lior)

Sorry you two, but I was the sole winner in this... teehee.



PDF by: traitor#ZEN